

La. THE
H E R M I T:
Or, The Unparallel'd
S U F F E R I N G S
And Surprising
A D V E N T U R E S
O F
Philip Quarll,
A N E N G L I S H M A N:

Who was lately discovered by Mr. DORRINGTON, a *Bristol* Merchant, upon an uninhabited island in the SOUTH-SEA: where he has lived about FIFTY YEARS, without any Human Assistance; still continues to reside, and will not come away.

C O N T A I N I N G,

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>I. His Conferences with those who found him out; to whom he recites the most material Circumstances of his Life; as that he was born in the Parish of <i>St. Giles</i>, educated by the charitable Contribution of a Lady, and put 'Prentice to a Locksmith.</p> <p>II. How he left his Master, and was taken up with a notorious House breaker, who was hanged; how, after his Escape, he went</p> | <p>to Sea a Cabin-Boy, married a famous Whore, lifted himself a common Soldier, turned Singing-master, and married three Wives, for which he was tried and condemned at the <i>Old Baily</i>.</p> <p>III. How he was pardoned by King CHARLES II. turned Merchant, and was shipwrecked on this desolate Island on the Coast of <i>Mexico</i>.</p> |
|--|---|

T H E T H I R T E E N T H E D I T I O N .

L O N D O N:

Printed for J. WREN, opposite *New Exchange Buildings* in the *Strand*; S. CROWDER, H. WOODGATE, J. FULLER, and J. WARCUS, 1783.



THE P R E F A C E.

TRUTH and Fiction have, of late, been so promiscuously blended together, in performances of this nature; that in the present case, it seems absolutely necessary to distinguish the one from the other. If Robinson Crusoe, Moll Flanders, and Colonel Jack, have had their admirers among the lower rank of readers; it is as certain, that the morality in masquerade, which may be discovered in the travels of Lemuel Gulliver, has been an equal entertainment to the superior class of mankind.

Now it may, without the least arrogance, be affirmed, that though this surprising narrative be not so replete with vulgar stories as the former, or so interspersed with a satirical vein, as the last of the above-mentioned treatises; yet it is certainly of more use to the publick, than either of them, because every incident herein related is real matter of fact. But because my share in this work is no other

than that of a bare editor ; I think it my duty to account for the possession of this manuscript.

It was put into my hands, about a year ago, by Mr. Dorrington, an eminent merchant, with full liberty to publish it when, and in what manner, I thought most proper. I hope therefore it will not be deemed impertinent to give some account of my friend, as a reputation to the work itself.

“ Mr. Edward Dorrington is descended from a very
 “ ancient and honourable family in Staffordshire. His
 “ grandfather, Mr. Joseph Dorrington, removed out of
 “ that county, to Frome in Somersetshire : his employ
 “ was that of a very considerable grazier : The issue he
 “ left at his decease was one son, Richard (the father of
 “ my friend), and two daughters. Mr. Richard Dorrington
 “ for some time, was a student of Gray’s Inn ; but,
 “ liking a country life best, he having thoroughly qualified
 “ himself, retired to Frome, the above mentioned residence
 “ of his father ; where he married Mrs. Margaret Groves,
 “ of Taunton, a gentlewoman of about a
 “ thousand pounds fortune. Soon after his marriage he
 “ went and settled at Bath, where the integrity of his
 “ fair practice soon rendered him eminent in his profession.
 “ He acquired a very competent estate, and died
 “ in the year 1708, having no other issue than his only
 “ son, the present Mr. Edward Dorrington, whom he
 “ had put to be bred a merchant, under the care of Mr.
 “ Stephen Graham of Bristol. His diligence and courteous
 “ behaviour, during his servitude, so highly recommended
 “ him to his master’s esteem, that when his time
 “ was expired, he admitted him into a moiety of his com-
 “ merce, married him to his daughter, and gave her an
 “ handsome portion suitable to his merit.

“ The happiness of my acquaintance with him began in
 “ his apprenticeship ; and has, with the greatest satisfaction
 “ to me, continued ever since.”

As to the genuineness of this treatise, I am farther to assure the reader, that as Mr. Dorrington is allowed by all who know him, to be a gentleman of unquestionable veracity, and above attempting an imposition upon the publick ;

P R E F A C E.

vi

publick; so the first book herein was wholly written by himself, and the second and third books were faithfully transcribed from Mr. Quarll's parchment roll, which was a continuation of what my friend had begun.

When Mr. Dorrington undertook this voyage, he set sail, as is well known, from Bristol to the South-Sea; and traded all along that coast to Mexico, now called New-Spain.

And he is now making a second voyage to the same places.

To proceed to the work itself: The first book contains a relation of Mr. Dorrington's discovery of Mr. Quarll, his several conferences with him, a description of the island, and the manner of our Hermit's living there; with many other curious particulars.

The second and third books are the contents of the Hermit's parchment-roll above-mentioned, and contain the most surprizing, as well as various turns of fortune ever yet recounted in any work of this kind. And, although the continued series of misfortunes which attended him seemed to render his life an example of the most unhappy state of human nature; yet we do not find so great an enormity in his actions, that vengeance should pursue him so closely by unparalleled crosses. If polygamy could call down such resentments, we must be silent; nor farther urge his fate.

However, for this fact he was brought to justice by the laws of his country; and he accounts for the inducements of his committing that sin at his trial. This reflection therefore should be wiped off, since he is now become the humblest of penitents.

The observations throughout these sheets will be found to be modest, serious, and instructive, and all centre in the unerring moral, that,

Whate'er we do, or wherefo'er we're driv'n,
Still, we must own, such is the will of heav'n.

To conclude: In the publication of these papers, I have discharged two promises; the one made by Mr. Dorrington to the Hermit, and the other made by myself to Mr. Dorrington. And that they meet with a reception, as candid as they are useful, is the hearty prayer of

The Readers Humble Servant

P. L.



O N



ON THE
HERMIT'S
SOLITUDE.

BEHOLD a man in his first class of years,
When youthless sports made way for growing cares,
The chequer'd fortunes of a manly age,
Busies reflecting sense with thoughts more sage :
Various affairs will cause a world of woes :
Then in the fall of life how sweet's repose !
The calm, he now enjoys, makes full amends
For all he felt ; heav'n never ill intends ;
Suff'rings are sent to us from God above ;
To make us practise faith, and sacred love ;
Aw'd into patience, by fresh scenes of fate,
We live too soon, and learn to live too late.
In busy worlds, and trading peopled towns,
More fast we sin, than sin itself abounds.
In soft repose, Quarrell empires does disdain ;
Free from disquiet, solitude's his gain.
Thoughts more sublime, a haven more serene,
Nought ere to vex him that may cause the spleen.

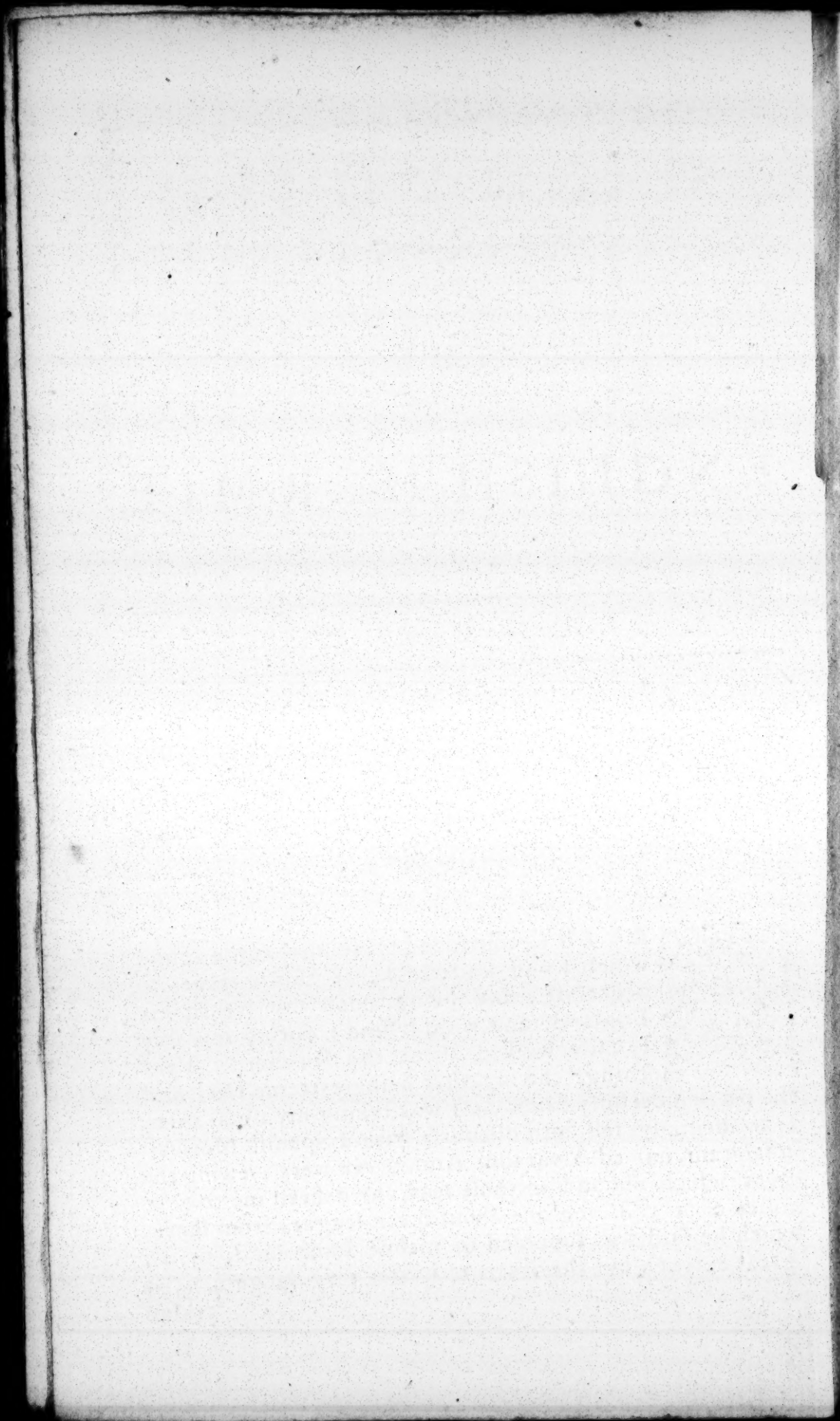
Methinks

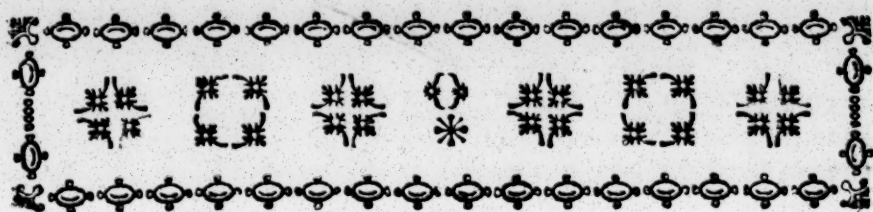
Methinks I with him share of Eden's grove,
And wish no better Paradise to rove:
Here's not ambition with her gaudy train,
Nor envy trampling down the poor or mean;
Nor avarice nor haughty pride invade,
Nor can remorse his slumbering nights upbraid;
In peace he rests, unenvy'd or unknown,
And pities monarchs on their toilsome throne.
No king that reigns, but must as mortals die;
And when they rule, no subject should ask, why?
Heav'n grants them licence; and, when God gives laws,
Where's the bold man that dares dispute the cause?
Would the great men from one so mean be told,
They serve a crown for int'rest and for gold?
'Tis with content Quarll lives; he's truly blest'd,
Has nought to dread, nor is with aught distress'd;
Prays for his country, and its present prince,
That he may reign in heav'n, when call'd from hence,
Here, in these lonely shades, he just uprose,
A type of resurrection to disclose;
A resurrection from a watry hell,
Where shoals of terrors strove which should excel;
A resurrection, emblem of the last,
Which will recal our ev'ry guilt that's past:
Drawing a glare of conscience to our view,
Of horror to our sins, both old and new:
But so unspotted in his present state,
I'd wish myself as happy, not more great:
I'd know no change; but, when God calls, obey,
Prepar'd in my account for judgment-day:
Then happy rise from cares, and worldly toys,
To more substantial and eternal joys.
This honest Hermit, at a transient view,
Seems to be born all precedent t' out-do.
Something uncommon makes him wond'rous seem:
Sound are his morals, drawn from ev'ry theme.
Thus from our English Hermit, learn to know,
That early piety opposes woe.
Thro' ev'ry stage of life see Philip tost,
And on a desert shore by tempest cast,
Where he's most happy, when imagin'd lost:
So true it is, the Gods our good design,
As lab'ring slaves dig diamonds from a mine.

From:

From rugged rocks the sailors gain a prize,
And, shipwreck'd oft, from death to life arise;
So may we at the last dread trumpet's sound,
By true repentance here on earth, be found,
Acceptable in heaven, where joys abound!
In grateful hymns hail in the new spring-day,
And like the angel's never cease to pray:
A kingdom Quarll doth undisturb'd enjoy;
He's rais'd a monarch, from an abject boy.
And here I can't omit the pencil'd plan,
Of Beaufidelle his monkey, and his man.
The docile beast most servilely obeys,
And justly merits more than human praise;
A beauty of his kind, good-natur'd too,
A brute so pleasing, wonderful and new,
Subservient to his lord, loving and just:
Where's human servant we can thus intrust?







T H E

E N G L I S H H E R M I T.

B O O K. I.

*An ACCOUNT how Mr. QUARLL was found out ;
with a description of his dress, habitation, and
utensils ; as also his conversation with the per-
sons who first discovered him.*

AVING concluded those mercantile affairs which I had undertook, by this voyage, to negotiate ; and being upon my return for England, and wind bound ; during my stay I daily walked about the sea-shore. Very early one morning, the weather being extreme fair, and the sea wonderfully calm, as I was taking my usual turn, I accidentally fell into discourse with a Spanish Mexican inhabitant, named Alvarado: And, as we were viewing the rocks which abound in those seas, he desired me to take notice of a vast long one about seven leagues from shore, which he said was supposed to inclose some land, by its great extent ; but the access to it was very dangerous, by reason

reason of the rocks, which reach so far under water, being in some places too shallow for boats, and in others too deep to ford over ; and the sea commonly very rough in that place, hitherto prevented farther research, supposing the advantage which might accrue from the land, would not countervail the cost and trouble of making it inhabitable ; for that he and some friends had on a fine day, as it now was, the curiosity to go as near as they could with safety, which was about fifty yards from the main rock, but were forced to return as unsatisfied as they went ; only, that he had the pleasure of catching some delicious fish, which lay playing upon the surface of the water, having a roe in his hand, and lines in his pocket, being seldom without, when he walks on the sea-shore : These fish are somewhat larger than a herring in his prime, skinned like a mackerel, made as a gudgeon, and of divers beautiful colours ; especially if caught in a fair day ; having since observed, that they are more or less beautiful, according to the serenity of the weather.

The account he gave me of them excited my curiosity to go and catch some ; and he being as usual, provided with tackle, we picked up a parcel of yellow maggots, which breed in dead tortoises upon the rock, at which those fishes bite very eagerly.

Thus equipped with all necessaries for the sport, we agreed with a young fellow, one of the long boat's crew, belonging to the ship I was come over in ; whose master being just come onshore, and not expected to return speedily, he readily consented to row us thither for about the value of a shilling.

Being come to the place, we found extraordinary sport : the fishes were so eager, that our lines were no sooner in but we had a bite.

Whilst we were fishing, the young man that rowed us thither, 'spying a cleft in the rock, through which he saw a light, had a mind to see what was at the other side ; so put off his cloaths in order to wade to it : Thus, having taken the hitcher of the boat, he gropes along for sure footing, the rock being very full of holes.

Being come to the cleft, he creeps through, and in a short time returns, calling to us with precipitation, which expressed both joy and surprise : Gentlemen ! gentlemen ! said he, I have made a discovery of a new land, and the finest that the sun ever shone on : Leave off your fishing ;
you'll

you'll find here much better business. Having by that time caught a pretty handsome dish of fish, we put up our tackling, fastened our boat to the rock, and so we went to see this new-found land.

Being come at the other side of the rock, we saw, as he said, a most delightful country, but despaired going to it, there being a lake about a mile long at the bottom of the rock, which parted it from the land; for neither Alvarado nor myself could swim; but the young fellow, who could, having leaped into the water, finding it all the way but breast high, we went in also, and waded to the other side, which ascended gently, about five or six feet from the lake, to a most pleasant land, flat and level, covered with a curious grass, something like chamomile, but of no smell, and of an agreeable taste: It bore also abundance of fine lofty trees, of different kinds and make, which in several places stood in clusters, composing groves of different height and largeness. Being come to a place where the trees stood in such a disposition as gave our sight a greater scope, we saw, at some distance, a most delightful wood of considerable extent. The agreeableness of the perspective made by nature, both for the creating pleasure and condolence of grief prompted my curiosity to a view of the delights which the distance we were at might in some measure, rob us of: But Alvarado, who till then, had discerned nothing whereby we could judge the island to be inhabited, was fearful, and would not venture farther that way, lest we should of a sudden be sallied upon by wild beasts out of the wood; and, as I could not discommend his precaution, the thickness of it giving room to believe there might be dangerous creatures in it; so we went southwards, finding numbers of fine trees, and here and there small groves, which we judged to be composed of forty or fifty several trees: but, upon examination, we found it, to our great amazement, to proceed of only one plant; whose outmost lower branches, bending to the ground, about seven or eight feet from the middle stem, struck root, and became plants, which did the same; and in that manner covered a considerable spot of ground; still growing less as they stood farthest from the old body.

Having walked for some time under that most surprising and wonderful plant, admiring the greatness of nature's works, we went on, finding several of the same in

our way, wherein harboured monkeys; but their swift flight prevented our discerning their colours; Yet going on, we found they were two kinds; one having green backs, yellow faces and bellies; the other grey, with white bellies and faces: but both sorts exceeding beautiful.

At some distance we perceived three things standing together, which I took to be houses: I believe, said I, this island is inhabited; for, if I mistake not, yonder are dwelling-places. So they are, said Alvarado; and therefore I do not think it wisdom to venture any farther, least they should be savages and do us hurt; so would have gone back: But I was resolved to see what they were, and persuaded them to go on; saying, it would be time enough for us to retreat when we perceived danger. That may be too late, said he: For as evil doth not always succeed danger, danger doth not always precede evil; we may be surpris'd. Well, well, said I, if any people should come upon us, we must see them at some distance; and if we cannot avoid them, here are three of us, a good long staff with an iron point at one end, and an hook at the other; I shall exercise that, and keep them off, at least till you get away: Come along, and fear not. So I pulled him along.

Being come near enough to discern better, we found that what we took for houses were rather arbours, being apparently made of green trees: Then, indeed, I began to fancy some wild people inhabited them, and doubted whether it were safe to go nearer; but concealed my doubt, lest I should intimidate Alvarado so that he should run away, to which he was very much inclined. I only slackened my pace, which Alvarado perceiving, imagined that I saw some evil coming, which he thought unavoidable; and not daring to go from his company, he only condoled his misfortune; saying, he dearly repented taking my advice: That he feared we should pay dearly for our silly curiosity; for indeed these things were more like thieves' dens, or wild people's huts, than Christians' habitations.

By this time we were come near a spot of ground, pretty clear of trees, on which some animals were feeding, which I took to be goats; but Alvarado fancied them to be deers, by their swift flight at our appearing: However, I inferred by their shyness, that we were out of the way

way in our judgment concerning the arbours : For, said I, if these were inhabited, those creatures would not have been so scared at the sight of men ; and, if by nature wild, they would not graze so near men's habitations, had there been any body in them. I rather believe some hermit has formerly lived there, and is either dead or gone. Alvarado, who to that time, had neither heard nor seen any that could contradict what I said, began to acquiesce to it, and goes on

Being come within reach of plain discernment, we were surprized : If these, said I, be the works of savages, they far exceed our expert artists. Their regularity appeared unconfined to the rules of art, and complete architecture without the craft of the artist ; nature and time only being capable of bringing them to that perfection. They were neither houses, huts, nor arbours, yet had all the usefulness and agreements of each.

Having sufficiently admired the uncommon beauty of the outside without interruption, but rather diverted with the most agreeable harmony of various singing-birds, as perched on a green hedge, which surrounded one acre of land near the place, we had the curiosity to see the inside ; and, being nearest the middlemost, we examined that first. It was about nine feet high, and as much square ; the walls were strait and smooth, covered with green leaves, something like those of a mulberry tree, lying as close and regular as slates on a slated house : the top went up rounding like a cupola, and covered in the same manner as the sides : from each corner, issued a strait stem, about twelve feet higher, bare of branches to the top, which were very full of leaves, and spread over, making a most pleasant canopy to the mansion beneath.

Being full of admiration at the wonderful structure and nature of the place, we came to a door which was made of green twigs, neatly woven, and fastened with a small stick, through a loop made of the same.

The door being fastened without, gave us encouragement to venture in ; it being evident, that the host was absent : so we opened it, and the first thing we saw, being opposite to the door, was, a bed lying on the ground, which was an hard dry hearth, very smooth and clean ; we had the curiosity to examine what it was made of, and found it another subject of admiration. The covering was a mat about three inches thick, made of a sort of grass,

which, though as dry as the oldest hay, was as green as a leek, felt as soft as cotton, and was as warm as wool: the bed was made of the same, and in the same manner, but three times as thick; which made it as easy as a down bed: under that lay another, but somewhat harder.

At one side of the room stood a table made of two pieces of thin oak board, about three feet long, fastened upon four sticks driven into the ground, and by it a chair made of green twigs, as the door; at the other side of the room lay a chest on the ground, like a sailor's small chest; over it, against the wall, hung a linen jacket and breeches, such as seamen wear on board; on another pin hung a large coat, or gown, made of the same sort of grass, and after the same manner as the bed's covering, but not above half an inch thick; and a cap by it of the same: these we supposed to be a winter garb for somebody.

Having viewed the furniture of the dwelling place, we examined its fabric, which we could not find out by the outside, it being so closely covered with leaves; but the inside being bare, we found it to be several trees, whose bodies met close, and made a solid wall, which by the breadth of every stem, we judged to be about six inches thick: their bark being very smooth, and of a pleasant olive colour, made a mighty agreeable wainscoting; the roof, which was hung very thick with leaves, was branches, which reached from end to end, and were crossed over by the side ones that were woven between, which made a very even and smooth ceiling, so thick of leaves and branches, that no rain could penetrate. My companion's uneasiness, expecting the host's return every moment, hindered my examining every thing more narrowly, and, having slightly looked into the chest, which lay open; wherein we saw nothing but sheets of parchment, which his haste would not permit me to look into, we went away.

Going out, we saw at one corner of the room, behind the door a couple of firelocks, the sight of which much alarmed my company, and, I must confess, startled me; for, till then, I was inclinable to believe some hermit dwelt in the place: but finding arms in the room of a crucifix, and religious pictures, which were the common ornaments of those religious men, made me waver in my opinion: and, having taken the pieces in my hands, which, for rust, appeared not to have been fit for use for
many

many years, renewed my former opinion ; supposing them to be the effects of some shipwreck, which the hermit found upon the rocks. But my company, persisting in their own, hasten'd out, and would have gone quite away, without seeing any more, had I not, by many arguments, made them sensible, that if those arms had been intended for the evil use Alvarado imagined, they would have been kept in better order ; to which being obliged to acquiesce, he consented to go and examine the other, it being as worthy of admiration as that we had seen, though quite of another nature, but much of the same height and make.

The next we came at was cover'd all over with the same sort of grass as grew on the ground, which lay as even, as though it had been mowed and rolled : behind it were several lodges, made, as it were, for some dogs ; but we neither saw nor heard any.

Having viewed the place all round, we posted the young fellow with us at the outside, to give notice when any body appeared, lest we should be surprized whilst we saw the inside ; so, having opened the door, which was made and fastened after the manner of the first, we went in, expecting to find another dwelling place, but it proved rather a kitchen ; there being no bed, but only a parcel of shells, of different sizes, which we supposed to be applyed for utensils, some being scorched at the outside as having been on the fire, but exceeding clean within : the rest were, both inside and outside, as fine as necks of pearl.

At one end of the room was a hole cut in the ground like stew-stoves, in great kitchens ; about three or four feet from that there was another fire-place, made of three stones, fit to roast at ; in both which places appeared to have been fire lately, by wood coals, and ashes fresh made. This confirmed my opinion, that it was an hermitage. Alvarado, who all along feared we should meet with men who would misuse us, was not a little pleased to find fire-places in room of beds, and kitchen utensils instead of weapons. I hope, said he, we are not in so great danger as I feared ; here cannot be many men, unless they croud together in yonder place ; and, if so, they would have been here before now, had they been in the way. His fears being in a great measure dispersed, we looked about more leisurely ; and, seeing several shells, that were covered, on a shelf that lay across two sticks that

were stuck in the wall, which was made of turf; we had the curiosity to see what was in them; and found, in one, pickled anchovies: in others mushrooms, capers, and other sorts of pickles. Let them, said I, be who they will that dwell here, I am sure they know good eating; and therefore, probably may be no strangers to good manners. Upon another shelf, behind the door, lay divers sorts of dried fishes; and upon the ground stood, uncovered, two chests with fish and flesh in salt.

These provisions being somewhat too voluptuous for an hermit, gave us room for speculation. I have lived (said Alvarado) at Mexico these six years, and have been at Peru above twenty times, and yet never heard talk of this island: the access to it, is so difficult, and dangerous, that, I dare say we are the first that have been on these sides of the rocks. I am very apt to believe, that a company of determined Buccaneers, which are said to frequent these seas, shelter here; and that the habitation we have seen, and this place, belong to their captain; and that the company resort in caves up and down these rocks. Really I could not well gainsay it, being too probable, yet I would not altogether acquiesce to his opinion, lest he should thereby take a motive to go away before we had seen the other place. I must confess, said I, here's room for conjectures, but no proof of certainty: however, let it be as you say, 'tis a plain case here are none to disturb us: therefore, whilst we have liberty, let us see the other place, so we fastened the door as we found it, and went to the next, which was shut after the same manner as the two preceding, but made of quite different stuff; being a compleat arbour, composed of trees, planted within a foot of one another, whose branches were woven together in such a regular manner, that they made several agreeable compartments, and so close, that nothing but air could enter: it was of the same height and bigness with the kitchen; which stood at the other end of the dwelling-place, which made a very uniform wing to it.

The coolness of the arbour removed our doubts of its being another dwelling, unless only used in hot weather.

Having sufficiently viewed the outside, we went in, and found several boards, like dressers or tables in a pantry, on which lay divers broad and deep shells, as beautiful as those in the kitchen; in some of which was butter, in others

thers cream and milk. On a shelf lay several small cheeses, and on another a parcel of roots like Jerusalem artichokes, which seemed to have been roasted. All this did but confirm the opinion we were in, that it was no hermitage; there being sufficient to gratify the appetite, as well as to support nature. Therefore not knowing what to think of the master of the house, we made no long stay, but concluded to haste, and get our fish dressed, it being near dinner-time; and as the trees stood very thick inland, and might conceal men from our sight till we came too near to shun them; we thought it proper to walk on the outside, near the rocks, that we might see at some distance before us.

Walking along, a phlegm sticking in my throat, I happened to hawk pretty loud; the noise was answered from I believe twenty places of the rock, and in as many different sounds; which alarmed Alvarado, who took it to be a signal from men concealed up and down the rock, not considering the difficulty of their coming at us; there being a lake at the foot of it, which they must have been obliged to wade over, and which would have given us time to get away: but fear, which often blinds reason, represented the evil infallible to his thought, which was morally impossible. I did all I could to make him sensible they were but echoes; and, to convince him thereof, I gave a loud hem, which was answered in like manner; but by being a second time repeated, and by a louder voice, I was certain the last did not proceed from me; which put me in apprehension that somebody, besides myself had hemm'd also. My companion, whose countenance, being turned as pale as death, expressed the excess of his fears, would have run away, had not the voice come from the very way we were to go. Now, said he, (hardly able to utter his words for trembling) you are, I hope, convinced that it would have been safer for us to retire, instead of gratifying your unreasonable curiosity: what do you think will become of us? the young fellow, at these words, falls a weeping, saying, he wished he had missed the getting of that money, which was like to be dearly earned. I must confess, I began to be a little apprehensive of danger, and wished myself safe away, but concealed my thoughts; heartening them as well as I could: and, representing the danger equal, either moving for-

wards.

wards, or standing still, I at last persuaded them to go on.

We were scarce gone forty paces farther, before we perceived, at a considerable distance, something like a man, with another creature, but presently lost them among the trees, before we could have a full view of them; which made every one of us conceive a different idea of what we had seen. Alvarado would have it be a giant, and a man of common size with him, and both armed cap-a-pee. The poor lad, who was already as bad as a slave, being bound to a severe, ill-natured master, feared death more than bondage; so took what he had seen for some she-bear, and one of her whelps with her, to make her yet more dreadful; and, by all means, would have thrown himself into the lake, in order to get at the other side of the rock: thus the danger appeared to each of them to be what they dreaded most; but I was somewhat better composed in mind than they. I gave the object I saw the likeliest resemblance the time it was in sight would permit, which I could adapt to nothing but a man of common size, and somewhat like a dog with him; so persisting in my opinion made them waver in theirs: thus we went on something better composed.

Being gone about an hundred yards farther, we saw the same again, but nearer hand, and without interruption, the place being pretty clear of trees: thus having a full view, we were all, to our great satisfaction, convinced, that what had been taken for a formidable giant, and a terrible she-bear, was but an ordinary man; but that which was with him running up a tree as soon as he perceived us, prevented our discerning what it was: but the man, who walked on apace, soon came within the reach of a more certain discernment, and appeared to be a venerable old man, with a worshipful white beard, which covered his naked breast and a long head of hair, of the same colour; which, spreading over his shoulders, hung down to his loins.

His presence, which inspired respect more than fear, soon recalled the frightened folks scared senses, who, to recover this faint-heartedness excused themselves by the misrepresentations distance causes on objects. The old man, who by that time, was come near enough to discern our speaking English, let fall a bundle of sticks he had under one arm, and a hatchet he carried in the other hand,
and

and runs to me, being the next to him, embracing me, and saying, dear countrymen, for I hear ye are Englishmen, by what accident are ye come hither? A place, the approach whereof is defended by a thousand perils and dangers, and not to be come at but by a narrow escape of death. Are ye shipwrecked? No thank God, said I, most reverend father; it was mere curiosity that brought us hither; these perils, which you say defend the approach of this island, being absent, by the extraordinary calmness of the sea. But, if I may ask, pray how came You hither? By the help of Providence, replied the good old man, who snatched me from out of the ravenous jaws of death, to fix me in this safe and peaceable spot of land. I was shipwrecked, thanks to my Maker, and was saved by being cast away. I conceive, Sir, said I, you have been chased by some pirates, and escaped slavery by striking upon the rocks, which surround this island: but now you have avoided that dismal fate, embrace the lucky opportunity of getting away from a place so remote from human assistance, which your age makes you stand in need of. That's your mistake, replied the old man: He who trusts in God, needs no other help. I allow that, Sir, said I; but our trust in God doth not require us to cast away, or despise, the help of man. I do not in the least question your piety but mistrust the frailty of nature, and debility of age; therefore would have you come and live within the reach of attendance. You may without slackening your devotion, live in the world; you shall have no occasion to concern yourself with any cares that may disturb your pious thoughts. No replied the old man; was I to be made emperor of the universe, I would not be concerned with the world again; nor would you require me, did you but know the happiness I enjoy out of it. Come along with me; and if after you have seen how I live here, you persist in your advice, I will say you have no notion of an happy life. I have, good Sir, said I, already seen, with great admiration, your matchless habitation; but there are other necessities your age requires: as clothes, to defend the injuries of the air; and meat suitable to the weakness of your stomach. That's your mistake, replied the old man, I want for no clothes; I have a change for every season of the year: I am not confined to fashions, but suit my own conveniencies. Now this is my summer dress; I put on warmer as the weather grows colder:
and

and for meat, I have fish, flesh, and fowls; and as choice as a man can wish for. Come, you shall dine with me, and ten to one but I may give you venison, and perhaps a dish of wild fowls too: let's go and see what providence hath sent us. So we went to a wood, about a mile farther, where he had fastened several low nets, in different gaps in the thickset; in one of which happened to be an animal something like a fawn, twice as big as an hare, the colour of a fox, and faced and footed like a goat. Did not I tell you, said the good man, I might chance to give you venison? Now let's look after the fowls. So we went a little farther, at a place where he had hung a long net between two high trees, at the bottom of which was fastened a bag of the same to receive the fowls; who in the night, being stopped by the net, fluttered to the bottom. There also happened to be game. A couple of fowls, made like woodcocks, but of the bigness and colour of a pheasant, were taken at the bottom of a bag. Now, said the old man, these I have, without committing the sin of bidding less for them than I know they are really worth, or making the poulterers swear they cost them more than they did. Well, now I may give you a dish of fish also, 'tis but going half a mile or thereabouts. There's no need, Sir, said I, for any more, there are but four of us, and here's provision for half a score; but if you are disposed for fish, we have some in a boat on the other side of a rock: it is but going for them. Very well, said the old man; it is but going about a mile, then strip and wade over a lake, then climb up a rugged rock twice backward and forward, to fetch what we can have for only taking a pleasant walk, all the while diverted with the sweet harmony of a number of fine birds. Look here: this complaisance often puts men to a world of needless trouble: come, we'll make a shift to pick a dinner out of these. Sir, said I, 'tis no shift where there's such plenty. Plenty! said the old man; why, I tell ye, this is a second garden of Eden; only here's no forbidden fruit, nor women to tempt a man. I see, Sir, said I, Providence supplies you plentifully with necessaries. It age does not deprive you of strength. Age! replied the old man, why I am not so old as that comes to, neither: I was but eight and twenty when I was cast away, and that is but fifty years ago. Indeed, if I lived as you do that dwell in the wise world, who hurry on your days as if your end came
on

on too slow, I might be accounted old. I do not gainsay, reverend father, but that you bear your age wonderful well ; but a multiplicity of days must make the strongest nature bend : yes, time will break the toughest constitution, and, by what you say, you have seen a considerable number of years. Yes, replied the old man, a few days have run over my head, but I never strove to out-run them, as they do that live too fast. Well, says he, you are a young man, and have seen fewer days than I ; yet you may be almost worn out : come, match this, says he. With that he gave a hem, with such a strength and clearness, that the sound made my ears tingle for some minutes after. Indeed, Sir, said I, you have so far out-done what I can pretend to do, that I will not presume to imitate you. Then I am afraid, said he, you will prove to be the old man. Well, then, you, or your friend, the strongest of you, fetch hither that stone ; it does not look to be very heavy (pointing at a large stone that lay about two yards off) I'll endeavour, Sir, said I, to roll it ; for I dare say, it is past my strength to lift it. So, to please the old man, I went to take it up ; but could hardly move it. Come, come, said the old gentleman, I find that must be work for me. With that he goes, takes up the stone, and tosses it to the place he bid me bring it. I see, said he, you have exerted your strength too often, which makes you now so weak : well, you see the advantage of living remote from the world. Had you had less of human assistance, I am apt to believe you would not want it so soon as you are likely to do. Come, let's make much of that little strength we have left, taking necessary support at proper times, it is now past noon ; therefore let us lose no time, but haste home to get our dinner ready. So we went back to the place where the bundle of sticks lay, which we made the young fellow with us carry, and went directly to the kitchen ; where, whilst he made a fire, one cast the animal, and the other two pulled the fowls. I am sorry, said the old man, you must take that trouble ; but your presence has frightened away my servant, who used to do that work for me. Have you a servant, then, Sir ? said I. Yes, said he, and one a native of this island. Then I find, Sir, said I, this island is inhabited. Yes, answered the old man, with monkeys and myself, but nobody else, thank God : otherwise I can tell you, I should hardly have lived so long. Then, Sir, said

said I, I suppose that was it we saw run up a tree. Yes, said he, my monkey like myself, loves not much company. Pray, Sir, said I, how did you happen to bring him so well under your command, as to make him stay with you, when he has liberty to run away? I wonder the wild ones do not entice him from you. I had him young, replied the old man, and made very much of him, which those creatures dearly love: besides, when he was grown up, the wild ones would not suffer him amongst them; so that he was forced to remain with me. I had another before this; but he, I may say, was sent by Providence, both to be a help and diversion to me; for he was so knowing, that he took a great deal of labour off my hands, and dispersed many anxious hours, which the irksomeness of my solitude had created. 'Tis now about twelve years since; for I keep a memorial, which indeed I designed to have been a journal; but I unfortunately let the regular order of days slip out of my memory; however I observed a seventh day, and reckoned the years from winter to winter; so I cannot well mistake.

One day, when I had roasted a quantity of roots, which I eat instead of bread, having spread them on my table and chest to cool, in order to lay them by for use; I went out leaving my door open, to let the air in.

Having walked an hour or two, I returned home, where I found a monkey, whom the smell of the hot roots had brought; who, during my absence, had been eating. My presence very much surprized him, yet he still kept his place, only discontinued eating, staring me in the face: the unexpected guest at once startled me, and filled me with admiration; for, certainly, no creature of its kind could be compared to it, for beauty. His back was of a lively green, his face and belly of a lively yellow: his coat all over, shining like burnished gold. The extraordinary beauty of the creature raised in me an ardent desire to keep him; but I despaired of making him tame, being come to his full growth: therefore having resolved to keep him tied, I went in and shut the door. The beast which, till then, had not offered to make his escape, appeared very much disturbed, and stared about him for some place to get out at: perceiving his disorder, I did not advance, but turned my back to him; to give him time to compose himself, which he in a short time did, as
appeared

appeared by his falling to eat again ; which made me conceive hopes that I should in time make him familiar. Having about me stale roasted roots, which eat much pleasanter than the fresh, and are less stuffing, I threw some at him, at which he seemed displeased, and stood still a while, staring in my face ; but my looking well-pleased, which I believe the animal was sensible of, made him pick them up, and fall to eating with a fresh appetite. I was overjoyed at his easy composure ; so reached him water in a shell that the want of nothing might induce him to a retreat. I set it down as near him as I could, without disturbing him, he came to it very orderly, and, having drank his fill, he laid it down, and looked me in the face, carelessly scratching his backside : seeing he had done, I advanced, and took away the shell at which he never stirred.

The forward disposition of the beast towards a perfect familiarity, made me resolve to stay within the remainder of the day, no wise questioning but my company would, in a great measure advance it. So I made a shift to sup upon a few roots I had about me, and went pretty early to bed : where I was no sooner laid, but the creature got across the feet thereof, and continued very quiet till next morning when I got up ; at which time he was also watching my actions. I made very much of him, which he took very composedly ; standing still to be stroaked. Then, indeed, I thought myself, in a manner, secure of him, and gave him his belly full, as I had done the day before ; but, having a pressing occasion to go out, I went to the door, thinking to shut him in till my return : but he followed me so close, that I could not open it without endangering his getting out ; which, though he appeared pretty tame, I did not care to venture, our acquaintance being so very new : yet, as I was obliged to go, I did run the hazard ; so opened the door by degrees, that, in case the beast should offer to run, I might take the opportunity to slip out, and keep him in ; but, the creature never offering to go any farther than I went, I trusted him to go with me, hoping that, if he went away, the kind usage he met with would, one day or other, make him come back again : but, to my great surprize as well as satisfaction, he readily returned with me, having waited my time ; yet, as I had occasion to go out a second time, wanting sticks to make a fire, for which I was obliged to

go near the place where most of his kind resorted, I was afraid to trust him with me, lest he should be decoyed by the others: therefore, having taken up a bundle of cords, with which I tie up my faggots, I watched an opportunity to get out, and leave him behind; but the beast was certainly apprehensive of my design; for he always kept near the door, looking stedfastly at my bundle of cords, as desirous of such another; which I not having for him, cut a piece of mine, and gave it him: and, seeing I could not leave him behind, I ventured to let him go with me, which he did very orderly, never offering to go one step out of the way, tho' others, of his kind, came to look at him as he went by.

Being come to the place where I used to cut dry sticks, having cut down a sufficient quantity, I began to lay some across my cord. The creature having taken notice of it, did the same to his, and with so much dexterity and agility, that his faggot was larger and sooner made than mine; which by that time, being large enough, and as much as he could well carry, I bound it up, which set him to do the same with his, which was abundantly too large a load for him.

Our faggots being made, I took up that which I had made, to see how he would go about taking up his; which, being much too heavy for him, he could not lift: so running round it, I believe twenty times he looked me in the face, as craving help. Having been sufficiently diverted with the out-of-the-way shifts he made, I gave him mine, and took up his: the poor animal appeared overjoyed at the exchange; therefore cheerfully takes up the bundle, and follows me home.

Seeing myself according to all probability, sure of the dear creature, whose late actions gave me such ground to hope from him both service and pleasure, I returned my hearty thanks to kind providence for its late prodigious gift; for certainly it was never heard of before, that, in a desert place, one of those wild animals, who fly at the single appearance of a human creature, should voluntarily give itself to a man, and from the very beginning, be so docile and tractable. O! surely it was endued with more than natural instinct! for perfect reason was seen in all its actions. Indeed I was happy whilst I had him; but my happiness, alas! was not of long standing. As he spoke, I perceived tears in his eyes. Pray, Sir, said I,
what

what became of that wonderful creature ! Alas ! said he, he was killed by monkeys of the other kind, which fell upon him one day, as he was going for water by himself : for the poor dear creature was grown so knowing, that, if, at any time, either fuel or water was wanted, I had nothing to do but to give him the bundle of cords, or the empty vessel, and he would strait go and fetch either : in short, he wanted nothing but speech to complete him for human society. Indeed, Sir, said I, I cannot blame you for bemoaning the loss of so incomparable a creature ; the account you give of him well entitles his memory to regret : but I hope this you have now in a great measure, makes up your loss. O ! not by far, replied the old man : Indeed he goes about with me, and will carry a taggot, or a vessel of water, pick a fowl, turn the spit or string, when meat is roasting ; yet he is nothing like my late dear Beaufidelle ; for so I call that most lovely creature : besides, this is unlucky ; in imitating me, he often does me mischief. It was but the other day that I had been writing for five or six hours ; I had occasion to go out and happened to leave my pen and ink upon the table, and the parchment I had been writing on close by it : I was no sooner gone, but the mischievous beast falls to work, scribbling over every word I had been writing ; and, when he had done, he lays it by in the chest as he saw me do what I had written, and takes out another, which he does the same to, and so to half a score more ; my return prevented his doing more mischief : however, in a quarter of an hour, that I was absent, he blotted out as much as I had been full six months in writing. Indeed I was angry, and could have beaten him : but that I considered my revenge would not have repaired the damage, but rather, perhaps add to my loss, by making the beast run away. Pray, Sir, said I, how came you by him ? Did he also give himself to you ? No, replied the old man, I had him young, and by mere accident, unexpected and unsought for ; having lost both time and labour about getting one in the room of him I had so unfortunately lost. The old ones are so fond of their young, that they are never from them, unless in their play they chase one another into the other kind's quarters, where there dams dare not follow them : for they are such enemies to one another, that they watch all opportunities to catch all they can of the contrary sort, which they immediately

strangle: which keeps their increase very backward, that would otherwise grow too numerous for the food the island produces; which is, I believe, the cause of their animosity.

About eight years ago, which is the time I have had this beast, I was walking under one of the clusters of trees where the green sort of monkeys harbour, which being the largest and most shady in the island: I took the most delight therein: as I was walking, at a small distance from me this creature dropt off a tree, and lay for dead; which, being of the grey kind, made me wonder less at the accident. I went, and took him up; and, accidentally handling his throat, I opened his windpipe, which was almost squeezed by that which took him, which my sudden coming prevented from strangling quite. I was extremely well pleased at the event, by which I got what my past cares and diligence never could produce me. Having pretty well recovered its breath, and seeing no visible hurt about it, I imagined that I soon might recover it quite; so hastened home with it, gave it warm milk, and laid it on my bed: so that with careful nursing, I quite recovered him: and, with good keeping, made the rogue thrive to that degree, that he has overgrown the rest of his kind. No question, Sir, said I, having taken such pains with him, you love him as well as his predecessor. I cannot say so, neither, replied the old man; tho' I cannot say but that I love the creature: but its having the ill fortune to be of that unlucky kind which was the death of my dear Beaufidelle, in a great measure lessens my affection. Besides, he falls so short, both of his merit and beauty that I must give the deceased the preference: and was it not for his cunning tricks, which often divert me, I should hardly value him at all; but he is so very cunning and facetious, that he makes me love him, notwithstanding I mortally hate his kind. I must divert you, whilst dinner is getting ready, with an account of some of his tricks.

Being extremely fond of me, he very seldom would be from me, but followed me every where: and, as he used to go with me when I went to examine my nets, seeing me now and then take out game, he would, of his own accord, when he saw me busy writing, go and fetch what happened to be taken.

One day finding a fowl in the net-bag, he pulled it alive as he brought it home ; so that I could not see any thing whereby to discern its kind. As soon as he came in, he set it down with such emotions as expressed joy ; the poor naked fowl was no sooner out of his clutches, but that it took to its legs for want of wings : its sudden escape so surprized the captor, that he stood amazed for a while, which gave the poor creature time to gain a considerable scope of ground ; but the astonished beast, being recovered from his surprize, soon made after it ; but was a considerable time before he could catch it, having nothing to lay hold of ; so that the fowl would slip out of his hands. The race held about a quarter of an hour, in which time the poor creature, having run itself out of breath, was forced to lie down before its pursuer, who immediately threw himself upon it ; so took it up in his arms, and brought it home, but was not so ready to set it down as before : for he held it by one leg till I had laid hold of it.

I had a second time as good diversion, but after another manner. One morning early whilst I was busy in my cottage, he went out, unperceived by me ; and, having been a considerable time absent, I feared that such another accident had befallen him as that which happened to his predecessor ; so I went to see after him : and as he would often go and visit the nets in the woods, I went there first, where I found him very busy with such an animal as this we have here, which he found taken in one of the gap-nets, and being near as big as he, kept him a great while struggling for mastership ; sometimes he would take it by the ears, now and then by one leg, next by the tail ; but could not get him along ; at last he laid hold of one of the hind legs, and with the other hand smote him on the back, in order to drive him, not being able to pull him along ; but the beast being too strong, still made towards the thicket, where he certainly would have hauled the driver, had I not come up to help him. Thus the old gentleman entertained us with his monkey's tricks whilst dinner was dressing.

The dinner being ready, we went to the dwelling-place to eat it, leaving the young fellow that was with us to attend the roasted meat, whilst we eat the first dish.

The old gentleman having laid the cloth, which, tho' something coarse, being made out of part of a ship-sail was very clean, he laid three shells on it, about the bigness of a middle sized plate, but as beautiful as any nakes of pearl I ever saw. Gentlemen, says he, if you can eat off shells, ye are welcome; I have no better plates to give you. Sir, said I, these are preferable to silver ones, in my opinion; and I very much question whether any prince in Europe can produce so curious a service. They may be richer, replied the old man, but not cleaner.

The first dish he served was soup in a large deep shell, as fine as the first, and one spoon made of shell, which he said was all his stock, being not used to, nor expecting company: however, he fetched a couple of muscle shells, which he washed very clean; then gave Alvarado one, and took the other himself, obliging me to make use of the spoon, so we sat down, Alvarado and I upon the chest, which we drew near the table, and the old gentleman (though much against his will), upon the chair.

Being set down, we fell to eating the soup, whose fragrant smell excited my appetite; and I profess the taste thereof was so excellent, that I never eat any comparable to it at Pontac's; nor any-where before: It was made of one half of the beast we took in the morning, with several sorts of herbs which looks like artichokes, asparagus, and celery; there were also bits of roasted roots in it, instead of toasted bread, which added much to the richness of it, tasting like chesnuts: But, what surprized me most, there were green pease in it, whose extraordinary sweetness was discernible from every other ingredient. Pity, said I, the access to this island is so difficult; what a blessed spot of land would it make, were it but inhabited! Here naturally grows what in Europe we plow, till, and labour hard for. You say, replied the old man, this would be a blessed spot of ground, if it was inhabited: Now I am quite of another opinion; for I think its blessing consists in its not being inhabited, being free of those curses your populous and celebrated cities abound in; here's nothing but praises and thanksgivings heard: And as for nature bestowing freely and of her own accord, what in Europe you are obliged, by industry and hard labour, in a manner to force from her, wonder not at: consider

consider how much you daily rob her of her due, and charge her with slander and calumny: Don't you frequently say, if a man is addicted to any vice, that it is his nature, when it is the effect and fruit of his corruption? So nature, who attended the great origin of all things at the creation, is now, by vile wretches deemed in fault for all their wickedness: Had man remained in his first and natural state of innocence, nature would also have continued her original indulgence over him. We may now think ourselves very happy, if that blessing attends our labour which before the fall of man flowed on him, accompanied with ease and pleasure.

Now these pease, which have so much raised your surprise, are indeed the growth of this island, tho' not its natural product, but the gifts of providence, and the fruits of labour and industry. I have tilled the ground; providence procured the seed; nature gave it growth, and time increase: with seven pease and three beans, I have in four years time, raised seed enough to stock a piece of ground, out of which I gather yearly a sufficient quantity for my use, besides preserving fresh seed. No doubt, Sir, said I, but, when right means are taken, prosperity will attend. By that time, having eating sufficiently of the soup, he himself would carry the remains to the young man in the kitchen, and fetch in the boiled meat and oyster sauce, which he brought in another shell much of the same nature with that which the soup was served in, but something shallower, which eat as delicious as house lamb.

Having done with that, he fetches in the other half of the beast roasted, and several sorts of delicate pickles which I never eat of before, and mushrooms, but of a curious colour, flavour and taste: These, said he are the natural product of a particular spot of ground; where at a certain time of the year, he said, he gathered for the space of six days only, three sizes of mushrooms: For tho' they were all buttons, and fit to pickle; by that time he had gathered all, he had also to stew, and some about four inches over, which he broiled: and they eat as choice as any veal-cutlet.

These pickles, Sir, said I, though far exceeding any I ever did eat in Europe, are really, at this time, needless; the meat wanting nothing to raise its relish; no flesh being more delicious.

Having

Having done with that, I offered to take it away, but he in no wise would permit me; so went away with it himself, and brought the fowls, at which I was somewhat vexed; for I feared I should find no room in my stomach for any, having eat so heartily of the meat; but having, at his pressing request, tasted them, my appetite renewed at their inexpressible deliciousness; so I fell to eating afresh.

Having done with that dish, the young man, having nothing to do in the kitchen, came and was bid to take away, and fall to: In the mean time, the good old man, fetched us, out of his dairy, a small cheese of his own making, which being set down, he related to us the unaccountable manner he came by the antelopes which supplied him with the milk it was made with; which introduced several weighty remarks on the wonderful acts of providence, and the strictness of the obligations we lie under to our great benefactor; likewise the vast encouragement we have to love and serve God, the benefits and comforts of a clear conscience, as also the inestimable treasure of content: From that he epitomized the different tempers and dispositions of men, much commending timely education, as being a means to reverse and change evil inclinations; highly praising the charity of those pious people who chuse to bestow good schooling upon poor folks children, before cloathing, and even food; the first being rather the most necessary, and the last the easiest to come at.

That discourse being ended, he enquired very carefully after the state of his dear native country, which, he said, he left fifty years ago in a very indulgent disposition. I gave him the best account I could at that time of all the transactions that had happened in England since his absence. The relation of past evils, said he, are like pictures of earthquakes and shipwreck, which affect the mind but slightly: And tho' I think myself out of any prince's power, yet I shall always partake with my countrymen's grief: Pray be explicit; What king have we now? A complete patriot, and father to his subjects, said I; both tender-hearted and merciful, encouraging virtue, and suppressing vice, a promoter of religion, and an example of charity. Then, said he, in a manner which expressed zeal and joy, long may that pious monarch live, and his blessed posterity for ever grace the British throne; And may old England, by its faithful obedience and
loyalty,

loyalty, henceforth atone for its past rebellions, that it may remove that execrable reproach it now lies under : To which we all said, Amen. Then he filled up the shell we drank out of, and drank good king George's health, which was succeeded with that of the royal family, and prosperity to the church. Thus ended a most delicious and splendid dinner, and a conversation both delightful and instructive : But, having not as then mentioned any thing about his own history, which I exceedingly longed to enquire into, I begged him to inform us by what accident he came hither, and how he had so long maintained a good state of health. To which he answered, time would not permit him to relate his own history, being very long, and the remainder of the day too short : but that he would, before we parted, give it me in writing ; having, for want of other occupation, made a memorial : But as to the maintaining of his health, he would tell me by word of mouth. The receipt, said he, is both short and easy : yet I fear you will not be able to follow it : Look you, you must use none but wholesome exercises, observe a sober diet, and live a pious life : Now if you can confine yourself to this way of living, I'll be bound that you will both preserve your health and waste less money : But, what's more valuable than all that, you will not endanger your precious soul. I returned him thanks for his good advice, and promised him I would observe it as strictly as I could. I am afraid, replied he, that will not be at all : You have too many powerful obstacles, the the world and the flesh, from whom your affections must be entirely withdrawn ; and all commerce prohibited, which is morally impossible whilst living : Therefore, since you are obliged to converse with the world, I will give you a few cautions, which if rightly taken, may be of use to you.

Make not the world your enemy, nor rely to much on its fidelity.

Be not too free with your friend : repetitions of favours often wear out friendship.

Waste not your vigour or substance on women, lest weakness and want be your reward.

Secrets are not safe in a woman's breast ; 'tis a confinement the sex can't bear.

Pass

34 THE ENGLISH HERMIT.

Pass no contract over liquor ; wine overcomes reason, and dulls the understanding.

He who games puts his money in jeopardy, and is not sure of his own.

There's but little honour to wager on sure grounds, and less wisdom to lay upon chance.

And in all your dealings take this for a constant rule :

He whom unlawful means advance to gain,

Instead of comfort, finds a constant pain :

What e'en by lawful arts we do possess.

Old age and sickness make it comfortless.

Be rul'd by me not to encrease your store

By means unjust ; for 'twill but make you poor,

Take but your due, and never covet more.

I returned him thanks for his good morals, the copy of which I begged he would give me in writing, for the better putting them in practice ; to which he readily consented, wishing I might observe them ; and being very sure that I should reap a considerable benefit thereby, both here and hereafter.

The day being pretty far spent, I was obliged to think of going, which grieved me much ; for I was so taken with his company, that if I had not had a father and mother whose years required my presence, I would have spent the rest of my days with him. I was so delighted with his company, and pleased with his way of living, that I almost overlooked my duty : but, after a struggle with my inclination, I was obliged to yield to nature. Thus, having expressed my vexation to leave so good a man, I took my leave. The good old man, perceiving my regret to leave him, could not conceal his to part with me. Indeed, said he, with tears in his eyes, I should have been very glad to have had a fellow creature in this solitary island, especially one whom I think possessed of a good inclination ; which I perceive you have, by your reluctance at leaving this innocent garden of life. I imagine that you have relations in the world that stand in need of you ; Heaven protect and send you safe to them ! I don't imagine that you will ever see this island again ; nor would I advise you to venture, the approach to it is so dangerous :

rous : Therefore, before you go, let me shew you some of the rarities with which it abounds. I told him, I was afraid time would not permit ; but as he said, that about an hour or two would do, and we had day light enough, I went along with him.

Going out, and seeing the guns stand behind the door, I asked what he did with them ? I keep them, said he, for a trophy of providence's victory over my enemies, and a monument of my fourth miraculous deliverance. As we went along, he related to us the manner in which he had been sacrilegiously robbed once by Indians : villainously invested twice by pirates ; the ruffians having combined to carry him away, like a slave, to their own country, and there make a shew of him, as if he had been a monster.

Talking, we walked under several of the before mentioned clusters of trees which proceed from one single plant : Being come to one larger than the rest, and which he said he frequented most it being the largest in the island ; this, said he, covers with its own branches, a whole acre of land ; so made several remarks on the wonderful works of nature ; which, said he, were all intended for the use and pleasure of man ; every thing in the universe containing such different virtues and properties as were requisite to render life happy. From that he made several more reflections on the fatal effect of disobedience, which is accounted a slight breach in duty, but is the mother of all sins.

That discourse held for a considerable time, till a parcel of each different kind of monkeys, having met, fell to fighting, observing an admirable order during the fray ; which withdrew our admiration from the preceding subject, and stopt us awhile to observe them.

The scuffle was very diverting whilst it lasted, which was but a short time ; for they happened to perceive us, at which they parted, each sort running to their own quarters, which were not very distant from one another, so that from it they could see each other's motions. I am sorry, said I the battle was so soon over ; they cuffed one another so prettily, that I could have stood an hour to see them. If you like the sport, said the old man, I can soon set them at it again. With that he takes out of his breeches pocket some roasted roots, which he commonly carried
about

about him, to throw at them when he went that way, which made them less shy of him.

Having broke the roots in bits, he laid them down in their sight; for they on both sides were peeping from under the leaves of the trees where they harboured: Then he cuts a score of sticks, about the thickness of one's finger, and near a foot and an half long, and laid them over the bits of roots: Then we retired to some small distance, and hid ourselves behind the trees.

We were no sooner out of sight but that they hastened to the meat; the green monkeys, having less ground to go, were at them first; yet never stopt, but went on to hinder the others approach, who vigorously strove to gain ground. The struggle was hard, and the victory often wavering; each party alternately gave way: At last the grey sort kept the advantage, and drove their adversaries back, who being come where the sticks lay, immediately took them up, and charged their enemies with a fresh courage, like a yielding army that has received new forces: Thus, with their clubsters in the front, they fell on their adversaries with great vigour, knocking them down like our English mob at an election; so drove them back again almost to their own quarters.

In the mean time stragglers of both kinds, who had not joined with the main bodies of the armies, seeing the coasts clear, and the provisions unguarded, unanimously fell to plunder, and quietly did eat what their comrades fought for; which the combatants perceiving, left off fighting, and of one accord turned upon the plunderers, who, by that time having devoured the booty, left them the field without contending any farther.

The battle being over, the old gentleman would have us to on, left, said he, they should fall to it again out of revenge; for those creatures are very spiteful.

Having dispersed them by our advancing, as intended, we walked from under the trees at the outside, to have a better view of the rock, which in some places, he said, changes its form as one approaches it: And, as he said, being got clear of the trees, we saw at a distance, as it were, a considerable number of buildings, and here-and-there something like steeples, which represented an handsome city; and seemingly the houses appeared so plain, that, had I not been apprized of the illusion, I should have taken it for such; but Alvarado and the young fellow,

low, could not be persuaded but what we saw were really buildings, and even in the island, though the old gentleman made us stop a while, the better to observe every thing; then bid us keep our eyes fixed at what we looked at, and go on: We perceived every particular of what we observed to change its form; that which at first seemed to be fronting, shewed itself either sideways or backwards; and so of every object, till being come at a certain distance, all the agreeableness of the perspective, of a sudden, turned into its real shape like a phantom; which, whilst visible, screens that which it stands before; but, by its vanishing, leaves it discovered.

Being come as near the rock as the lake that parts it would permit, we could discern nothing in it that could in the least soften its ruggedness, or give it a more agreeable aspect, than those which are represented in the pictures of shipwrecks.

The old gentleman, thereupon, made several learned observations on the alterations that distance works upon objects, and shewed how easily our organs of sight may be deceived; drawing from thence this inference, That we ought not to be too positive of the reality of what we see afar off, nor to affirm for truth that which we only heard of.

Having ended that discourse, he carried us to the other side of the jetting part of the rock, which, advancing like a bastion of a fortified wall, screen'd from our eyes a second piece of wonder; a fine rainbow, issuing, as it were, out of the mouth of a giant, lying on a rock, reaching quite over the lake: At the bottom of it I could not but stop to admire the various colours it consisted of, which far exceeded, in beauty and liveliness, any I ever saw in the sky, I presently imagined that it proceeded from the rays of the sun falling upon some pond, or other standing water, whose reflections rose and met the tops; which caused that beautiful circle. But Alvarado, who, by what he had seen before, concluded that the island was enchanted, said it was another illusion, which the place was full of; and would have gone away, but that the old man fell a laughing, and said, 'tis a sign you seldom inquire into natural causes: Well, do but come a little nearer to it, and you will find that which you term an illusion, is the natural effect of all fountains when the sun shines.

D

Being

Being come to the place it proceeded from, it proved, as he said, only a fountain. but of the clearest and sweetest water that ever was tasted ; but the place it issued out of was changed from the likeness of a giant to that of some strange sort of creature ; which, tho' having no particular resemblance, yet would bear being compared to several different things. The old man's opinion was, that it resembled a whale spitting water out at one nostril. Alvarado supposed it was more like an horse or a cow ; and rather the last, there being horns plain to be seen. For, my part, I could find no proper similitude to it, but that of an old monument, which formerly they built over the heads of springs. Timothy Anchors (for that was the name of the young fellow that was with us) being asked, what he could make of it? Why really, said he, nothing, unless it be an old patched-up pump that stands at the end of my mother's court in Rosemary lane (which every spring runs out of itself ;) which comparison made us all to laugh.

Thus we differed in our opinions as to the likeness, yet agreed, that it was the finest fountain, and the best water, we ever saw or drank. What surprized me most, was, the force wherewith it sprung from the rock that stood full five yards from the place it fell on, which was another subject of admiration ; for certainly the arts of men could not have invented nor compleated a more compact or pleasanter bason, tho' it had been for a fountain to adorn a monarch's garden : Indeed there were no masons, nor any expert artist's exquisite works to be seen, but a great deal of nature's matchless understanding : There regularity, dimension, and proportion, concerted to make it useful, convenient, and agreeable.

The bason was very near round, about eight feet diameter, a bank around it near a foot high, and as broad at top, slanting gently at the bottom, both inside and outside, which made a most pleasant and uniform bank, adorned with various small flowers and herbs of divers beautiful colours, and most fragrant smells.

Having viewed with pleasure and amazement such regularity in a wild and uninhabited place, I walked about it as long as the time I could stay would permit : I proposed going, but the old gentleman, taking me by the hand, stopt me : You have, said he, bestowed a considerable time in observing the fertility of this island ; now, pray

pray allow one minute for consideration : The object you have been admiring all this time is as wonderful and surprising, as beautiful and pleasant ; You see this fountain, which runs stiff, and as large as your thumb, and therefore by computation may be allowed to give near an hundred gallons of water in an hour : Now it runs night and day ; it neither decreases nor runs over its bank, but keeps to the same height. This, as you say, Sir, said I, is really worth inquiring into : So I went several times round it, searching for the place, whereby the overplus of the compliment did issue : but could not discover it. Come, said he, seek no more for that which nature has so well concealed : I have spent many hours in that inquiry, and still remain ignorant ; but have found the place out of which it runs into a fine fish-pond, about a mile inland ; we will make it in our way to the lake ; we may look at it as we go by, but can make no long stay. So we went on.

Going along, we came by an hollow part of the rock, which went in like an alcove, with a great many concavities in it in rows one above one another, as round niches where figures stand. Now, said the old man, we are here, I will entertain you with an invisible chorus of harmonious voices, little inferior to hautboys, trumpets, or other melodious music : here I twice come and pay my devotions each day. Alvarado, who, by what he had already seen, was prepossessed that the island was full of enchantments, was now certain of it ; and looked upon that place in the rock to be the receptacle of fiends, and evil spirits ; so would by no means stay ; but takes his leave, saying, he was not very curious of supernatural things. Supernatural, said the old man, you can't well call it, though to you it may be very amazing : It is therefore well deserving your sight ; I mean your hearing, the eyes having no share in the entertainment : we shall only sing a few psalms ; I am sure there can't be no harm in that, but rather good, being an holy exercise in divine worship, in which all good souls ought to join. That may be, said Alvarado ; but I love to see those with whom I worshipped : I don't think myself as yet company for spirits. As for your part, said Alvarado, (speaking to me) you may do what you please ; but take care your curiosity don't cost you too dear. Tim and I will wait for you in the boat ; but pray be not too long before you come.

So, having returned the old gentleman thanks for his kind entertainment ; they went away ; at which the good man was much affronted. What, said he, do your friends imagine I deal with spirits ? besides, where did they ever hear, that devils loved to sing psalms ? for here shall nothing else be sung : I would not for the world, that those admirable echoes, that hitherto have repeated nothing but the Almighty's praises, should be polluted with the sound of any profane words. I endeavoured to excuse their timorousness, saying, it was not a failing peculiar to themselves only, but to many besides. The old man allowed it, attributing the cause thereof to a very pernicious custom nurses have to frighten children when they cry, with buggabos, and such things, to make them quiet ; which frightful ideas often make such deep impression on their puerile minds, that, when they come to mature age, it is hardly worn out ; which intimidates many.

That discourse being ended, we advanced as near that part of the rock as the lake would permit, which in that place was not above seven or eight feet broad : so that we were within the concavity of the rock. Now, said the old man, let us sit down on this bank, and sing the hundred and seventeenth psalm. Indeed, Sir, said I, I don't know it by heart, and I have no psalm book about me. Well then, said he, I'll sing myself ; so begins ; but with such a clear and loud voice, managed with so much skill and judgment, that it exceeded all the singing I ever heard before ; and was repeated by such a number of melodious echoes that one would have believed there were a hundred voices in chorus.

The melody so transported me, that I willingly would have spent not only the remainder of the day, but the succeeding also ; the ecstacy having quite put out of my mind the necessity of my going, and the danger of delaying : But the good man having sung an evening hymn after the psalm, which he said he sung every night, he takes me by the hand : Now, said he, is not this emulation ? Who would not sing with such a chorus of choristers as you might imagine was there ? Indeed, Sir, said I, this has so great resemblance to the relation we have given in holy history of the superior joys the blessed possess in heaven, that I thought myself already there ; for which reason I would willingly end my days here. This

is

is impossible, said the old gentleman ; nor can you spend here many more moments : I have the fish-pond to shew you yet ; come let's go. So we went on about fifty paces from thence more inland : We saw at a small distance between the trees, a parcel of fowls like ducks, but considerably larger, which flew away from the pond at our approach towards them. He told me how he came by the old one that bred them, of which he was robbed.

At length being come to the pond, I was surprized at the clearness of the water, at the bottom of which seemed to be large rubies, emeralds, iacinths, and other coloured stones ; till, being come to the brink of it, those which I took for precious stones, proved to be fishes by their swimming about, which, to my thinking, looked like stars shooting from place to place in the sky. Having spent several minutes in admiring the surprising nature and beauty of the fishes, I took notice of the pond, which was about forty yards in length, and thirty in breadth : Its form was a broken oval, sinking in and out here and there, which made it the more agreeable : All round it grew divers sorts of herbs intermixed with flowers of different colours, and here and there a basket on sticks, which the old man told me he made and set there for his ducks to breed in. The day being far spent, the old man, after having shewed me the places at one side of the pond wherein the bason emptied itself, as also the other side whereby the pond ran into the lake, takes me by the hand : Come, said he, I will keep you no longer : night comes on apace, and the retreat from this island is dangerous ; therefore I would have you improve the short remains of the day, to avoid the dangers the darkness of the night may lead you into : So let us go home, that I may give you the memorial I have promised you, and then my blessing, and hearty prayers for your safe departure and happy arrival. So we went to his habitation, where he gave me a roll of parchment.

Here it is, said he, in a rough and unpolite language ; for I did not write it out of ostentation, or to exert my parts, but to keep me in mind of the many mercies I have received from heaven ever since my youth, and to record the wonderful effects of providence ; that if ever these writings should have the luck to fall into the hands of men after my decease, they may be encouragement to the destitute, and a comfort to the afflicted, that he who right-

ly applies himself, and firmly trusts in the Almighty, shall, at his extremity, find relief: And now my intent is in some measure answered, expecting you will revise and publish it when you come to old England. I must enjoin you not to give it out as my own dictation, but an history taken from heads out of my own memorial; for I have been obliged to insert particulars, and use such expressions, without which the account I gave of myself would have been imperfect; and which being related as by me, may chance to be accounted self flattery, which is a censure I would willingly avoid. I told him he might depend upon it, I should always, and on all accounts be very tender of any thing that could in the least lessen the merit of the subject, or tarnish the lustre of the history.

With that the good man takes me in his open arms, and embraces me over and over with all the tenderness words and actions could express; saying, with tears in his eyes, that my exit was a renewing of his past grief, and would for a considerable time damp the pleasures he before my coming did enjoy in his solitude; since now he again has had the comfort to converse with one of his dear countrymen, after full fifty years being severed from human society, the height of his grief having for some moments stopped the utterance of his words, he sighing laid his head upon my neck, squeezing me close in his arms.

This most tender and moving action moved me to a reciprocal grief: Never did any man reflect with more reluctancy than when I parted with that good old man, who having recovered in some measure his former firmness of mind, his soul being again resigned, we repeated our embraces with a mutual affection. Then I took my leave; but he would not part with me there; he would by all means wait on me to the lake I was to wade over to come at the rock, on the other side of which the boat waited for me: And when I came thither, he would also have waded over with me, that he might have the satisfaction of seeing me safe from the dangerous rock; but I would in no-wise permit him. Thus having prevailed upon him to stay behind, I prepared to wade over: So after a few more embraces, I crossed the lake, and came to my impatient companions, who received me with heavy reprimands for trusting myself so long alone with that

necro-

necromancer ; for nothing, said they, shall ever persuade us a man can have such plenty of dainties with only the help of nature : No, no, he may talk of providence as much as he pleases ; he applies to the black art ; and those voices he calls echoes are his invisible imps, which (if truth be known) are often employed in raising the wind, and causing storms, which render these seas often so dangerous : And it has been observed, that few or no ships come near those rocks, and escape being staved. For my part, I assure you I don't think myself safe, whilst within the reach of his enchantments. With that he takes one of the oars out of young Tim's hand, and fails to rowing. Indeed, said Tim, as you say, he looked very much like a conjurer with his long hair and beard ; and I believe he is conjuring now. See, here is bad weather coming ; let us make haste from these rocks.

Even as he said, in short, so it happened ; for in a little time after the wind rose, and the sea began to be a little rough ; so that I was forced to take the hitcher, and with it keep the boat from the rocks, whither the waves very often drove us ; but, standing out to sea, the wind grew more calm, and fair for the continent : I took one of the oars, and, by help of our sail, in a short time we got safe to shore ; where being arrived very much fatigued, we put up at the first cottage, which was inhabited by an old man and woman, Indians, where we dressed our fish, and went to supper ; which was scarce over, but I was hurried on board, the wind being tacked about, and fair for our departure.

We weighed anchor on the seventeenth day of May, 1724, and stood out to sea, and sailed south and by east till we arrived on the 26th at Panama on Terra Firma, after meeting with some stormy weather. Here we began to traffick, in our way home, for some corn, necessary for our following voyage, as also some cotton, some metals, rosins, gums, and pepper. Our stay was not long here ; for we sailed from thence on the fifth of June, the wind being then very favourable : But we had not sailed above twenty leagues, when we met with a violent storm, which lasted some hours, and the wind blowing hard at north north-east ; wherein we had the misfortune to lose our surgeon, one John Davis, who, being imprudently upon deck, was washed overboard by a prodigious wave coming in at the forecastle : Our ship received no
damage

damage in that storm; but our loss of Mr. Davis was very great, and worse than if any other man on board had been missing; for we might also call him our chaplain, as well as surgeon: And by his exemplary pious life, during the time he belonged to our ship, he might really be called a divine. He was a man, who, as he told me, had been educated at Hart-hall, Oxon, in his early days, and designed for the sacred robe: but his genius very much inclining to those most pleasant studies, *viz.* physic and surgery, he afterwards made them his practice; but meeting with some misfortunes, about the 35th year of his life, he left England in the year 1711, and embarked on board the John and Mary for New-England, where he lived till the year 1723, when our ship arrived at that country, at that time wanting a surgeon; for our own died, just at our approach near the continent. Our captain, on enquiry, having an excellent character of Mr. Davis, agreed with him for our voyage till we returned back thither again. I think it but just to eternize his memory in these memoirs, and give him the character which he merited.

He was a pious good man, sober, just, and virtuous; ready to serve, but never to offend any man. His morals were instructive to all those who knew him, and his constant exhortation (while on board our ship) to frequent daily prayers, was the reason that we esteemed him the doctor of our souls, as well as a surgeon to our bodies. Nay, which is still more, while he was with us, though he never entered into sacred orders, yet he told us, he thought it his duty to give us the best instructions he was capable of, for the preservation of our souls and bodies, both which were always in danger: And accordingly, after divine service (as I may call it) was performed by him in a very solemn manner, he would frequently discourse on the nature and heinousness of the sin of man, which occasioned the sufferings of Christ; on the terrors of hell, and the joys of heaven; as also on the glorious creation of the world, setting forth the works of Omnipotence in very lively colours, telling the advantage, pleasure, and beauty, that attended a godly life. Sometimes his discourses would be on natural philosophy, which were extremely well delivered: At other times on some of the sciences, most of which he well understood, and to which we gave very great attention, as being desirous of such useful knowledge:

knowledge : In short his death was greatly lamented by the captain as well as myself, and indeed by all the ship's crew ; for he was a man of a quick thought, and lively apprehension ; had an universal knowledge in things, intirely free from reservedness, but of perfect humility and condescension ; most agreeably entertaining in his conversation, and dear to all that ever knew him

Thus, having given an imperfect character of that great man, to whose memory I owe so much, I shall proceed to a further description of our voyage. As to the coasts on those seas, I think it needless to make any mention thereof, they have been so well described already by our modern geographers, nor is it any wise useful to my purpose ; so that I shall entirely omit it, and only give an account of the places where we traded or touched at for fresh provisions or necessaries, and remark what happened most worthy our notice in our voyage home to England.

The weather now proving more favourable, I began to peruse the memorials of my good old hermit : But oh ! with what moving sympathy did I share with him in the multitude of his misfortunes during his minor years ! Nor could I less sympathize with him in the ecstasies of his hermitical life, I read with pleasure and amazement what he had laboriously transcribed, being at that time doubtful whether it would be ever perused by any mortal ; where he set forth a continued series of misfortunes, as if linked together by divine providence (whilst he lived in the wise world, as he called it) : And in this account, during his abode on that desolate island, denotes that the omnipotent being had always an immediate direction in every circumstance or point of time. I was more and more astonished and amazed by this good man's precepts, who has abandoned the world, content to live in a desolate and lonesome island, uninhabited by any mortal but himself ; where he has had the space of fifty years to reflect and contemplate on the follies and misfortunes of man ; during which time his maxims were always his rule of life in every case. O ! may I once more see that dear old man, whose habitation is free from all anxious cares, from oppression and usury, and all the evils that attend this populous world ! There would I abide, and never depart from that happy solitude, which he so peaceably enjoys—

But

But whither am I running? These contemplations have made me forget the remarks of my voyage.

We sailed from Panama on the 6th day of June, and had frequent thunder and lightning, attended with some rain; but nothing else extraordinary happened. On the 15th we made Gorgona Bay in Peru, where our boat went on shore to a village on the main, with twenty hands well arm'd, resolving to get some fresh provisions at any rate; for we began to be in want, having taken in but very little at Panama. It is a low land, full of mangrove trees, and, within land, pretty high: The village was but poor; however, they brought away six hogs and four goats; some limes and plantanes. Not far from thence are some gold mines, but of no great note, as we were informed by some Indians. They are a very warlike people who live on that coast, and often engage one another with clubs and darts, made of hardwood. The island is about six leagues in length. There are monkeys, lizards, hares, and Guinea pigs; also several sorts of snakes, some of which are as big as one's leg; so that it is dangerous to walk in some parts of the island. One of our men happened to be bit by one, and did not live above six hours after; tho' his death had been prevented, I believe, had we not met with that misfortune of losing Mr. Davis, our surgeon. Here, also, we caught some mullets, and several sorts of fish extremely good, though unknown to us as to their names. In this island there is a creature which the Indians call a Mundago, but the Spaniards a Sloth, which I think is its properest name; for it is a creature which seems to sleep as it walks, by its slow motion: And it is reported, that it eats the leaves of trees, which are its only food; but it is so prodigious lazy, that when it has cleared one tree of its leaves, it will be almost starved to death before it attempts to climb another: In short, it is a very ugly creature, and seems to be of the monkey kind by its make; but its hair is thicker and longer, nor is it so agreeable to look at, and is different in its nature. Here we also got fresh water and wood; for there are very good brooks on that island, and wood enough. While we lay near the island, I went ashore; and, in my conversation with a Spaniard, he related to me the following account of one Thomas Jenkins, a Lancashire man, who was boatswain on board a merchant's ship, whose name I have since forgot, who was left on that island, and lived alone there

two

two years and three months ; but was first seen on that island by some Indians who came from the main for oysters, and other shell-fish, which they frequently gather for the Spaniards. He made his escape from them, and hid himself in the woods ; fearing that they would carry him to the Spaniards ; and, by that means, he might be made a slave ; chusing rather solitude, than to enter into bondage for his life. However, an English ship trading on that coast, had notice of it from the Indians ; and, imagining that he might be an Englishman cast away, or set on shore there (as he really was) by some pirate who had been in those seas, they sent their boat, with six hands, to the island in search of him. They took their speaking trumpet with them, and, by that means, after about six hours stay on the island, they found him out. He told them, that, at his first being set on shore upon the island, it seemed very melancholy and frightful ; when he began to reflect on the barbarity of pirates, to leave him there without provisions, or any manner of necessaries whereby he might support himself (they leaving him only his wearing cloaths, and his pocket-knife.) If they had left him any fire arms and ammunition, his case would not have been near so desperate ; because he then might have not only defended himself against any enemy, but likewise have killed some goats, or fowls, for his subsistence.) He also said, that what made him very melancholy, was, to think his habitation, and place of abode, was where he could have no human society, and in an island that he, at first, knew not whether there was any thing on it for his subsistence, as never being on that coast before. But the second day of his being there, he took a survey of the island, and found that there were monkeys, goats, &c. and also good fish. He dreaded greatly the snakes, which were larger than he had ever seen before ; however, as they endeavoured to get from him, he rested pretty well satisfied ; hoping there was no beast of prey to hurt him there ; for fear of which, at first, he climbed up into a pimento-tree to sleep. He was well pleased to find such good shell-fish, which was the only food he lived on for the first five days ; when, by accident, he caught a young kid, which very much rejoiced him : But he was, at a loss for fire to dress it ; till having nothing to employ himself with, but thinking he remembered that he had heard, that the rubbing of two pieces of wood hard together produced

duced fire, he tried the experiment: And by rubbing two pieces of pimento wood together, did produce fire (after the manner the Indians make use of it.) He then made a fire, as having wood enough, and broiled part of his goat, which was a delicious meal to him. He afterwards began to build himself a hut to dwell in, where he lived and dressed his fish and goat's flesh; but could at first only broil it, till he had driven two stakes into the ground, where he roasted it, with a wooden spit. As to fresh water, as I observed before, there were very good brooks in the valleys. At length he invented a way, by thickets, to ensnare a goat sometimes, which furnished him with flesh. Here were cabbage trees, which furnished him with sauce to his meat, it being very agreeable, when seasoned with the fruit of the Pimento tree, which is much like Jamaica pepper: But afterwards he could run a goat down. Sometimes he had the good luck to find some eggs; for there were very good fowls: He caught some young teal also; and, by cutting their wings, and keeping them always cut, he preserved them in a brook, just by his hut, which he had enclosed. There they bred and were tame. But being one day gone a pretty distance from his hut, a great number of monkeys finding them out, and that they could not fly away, destroyed them all. His clothes were almost worn out, nay, his shoes were quite gone, and had been for some time; but, to preserve his feet, he cut the goat skins in the shape of stockings, and sewed them or laced them up with thongs of the same; and also laced the foot part, making holes with his knife for the thongs, three or four times doubled together, to serve for soles. The Spaniards told me that he was so well inured to that way of life, when he was taken from the island, that it was a considerable time before he could relish either drink, or any kind of victuals, which was dressed on board the ship. I gave the Spaniard an account of the Hermit, to which he gave very great attention.

So, having refreshed ourselves, we sailed from hence, after a stay of three days, only in the bay; having got a pretty many goats from the island, and some maize or Indian corn. From thence we steered for the Gallapago islands, but, in our passage, met with several storms and tornadoes, attended with very great rains. Some of our
men

men began to be very sickly, which we thought proceeded from their eating the livers of some young seals they had caught, they being unhealthy. After about three days sail, we met with frequent calms. During this voyage, one of our Negro women, of which we had three on board, being with child, and near her time, was delivered of a fine boy, which was of a swarthy colour. She had been on board us ever since we came from the Brazils, and proved very useful in washing our linen, &c. but Juno, for that was her name, proved with child by one of our men, whose name was Thomas Higgins; I, with the help of the other two Negro women which were on board, performed the office of a midwife, and delivered her. I had purchased a little wine at Panama, which proved very useful to mull for Juno, to comfort her in that condition; also the other Negro woman, Tom Higgins, and I, drank one bottle, after her delivery; and we were really merry on that occasion. The captain was somewhat displeased at this accident; but being unwilling (in so long a voyage, attended with so many difficulties as we had met with) to inflict too heavy punishments on his men, he only obliged Tom to agree that he should allow Juno two pistoles, when she went ashore at Brazil, to take care of the child. Tom readily agreed thereto, but had some remorse of conscience, and began to reflect; and was really very much concerned to think, that the child got by him, (tho' on a Negro, yet she was a woman, and the child in likeness of himself, and firmly believing that it was really begot by him, and no other person) should be bred up in Paganism. Accordingly he grew very dull and melancholy at the thoughts thereof, which he communicated to me, asking my advice about it. So I persuaded him to be merry, and not cast himself down; for that many such accidents had happened in the West Indies, before then, among the Englishmen, who never thought much of it afterwards. However this had no effect at all on him. He told me, that whatever crimes other people had been guilty of, he could not reconcile himself thereunto. Finding him so very uneasy, I acquainted the captain of it: Ah! says he, is Tom under so great a concern about the child's not being educated in the Christian religion? Yes, Sir, said I; and I am apprehensive that it will grow upon him very much to his prejudice, he is so extremely concerned about it: For less things than that, I have known people

grow melancholy (as he seems to be;) and they have entered into a state of lunacy, and never could be brought to their former reason, but have laid violent hands on themselves. As he is a very honest, good-natured fellow (setting aside this slip) said I, I wish some expedient could be found out to make him easy. Well, then, Mr. Dorrington, says the captain, we have the common-prayer-book on board; and 'tis a pity we lost poor John Davis, our surgeon and chaplain: He could have christened the child, and that would have satisfied Tom. O, Sir, said I, with your leave, as we have no chaplain belonging to the ship, now Mr. Davis is dead; yet, as we are tolerated to bury our dead, pray why may we not christen the living, also? It can be no crime to do a good action. The captain approved of what I said; so I told him, with his leave, I would be chaplain, in that case, as well as I had been man-midwife before; But, Sir, said I, there is an obstacle that will hinder us still. He asked me what that was? Why, Sir, said I, we have neither godfathers nor godmothers; and you know that it is not accounted lawful to perform that ceremony, which is one of the sacraments, unless it be done with order and decency, as the church directs. To which the captain replied, Is there not Mr. Clark, our lieutenant? I and he will stand godfathers; and he shall, as he is Clark by name, perform the office of clerk in the ceremony. But, Sir, said I, what must we do for a godmother? You know there ought to be one and we have no woman on board that is a christian. Well, then, said the captain, the women we have on board, by a little persuasion, may be willing to be christened themselves; and, if they consent, they are of age, and therefore capable of answering for themselves, by which means they may become godmothers on occasion, to the child. So, accordingly, the captain called for a bottle of wine, and sent for Diana, one of the Negro women, aged about twenty three years. When she came into the cabin, the captain filled a glass of wine, and gave it her: After she had drank it, the captain said, so, Diana, 'tis to be hoped that you won't be troubled with the wantons, and play the trick your sister Juno did. Pray, how does the child do? To which she answered, it be ver well, but it cry, cry, ver much, great deal. Well, says the captain; but, Diana, I sent for you on another occasion: Do you not remember Mr. Davis, our surgeon and chaplain? Yes, says she, me ver well

well know him ; he gave me ver gret goot stuff (meaning a dram :) But, says the captain, you know, Diana, he was a very good man and used to tell you your duty, and teach you how to say your prayers. Yes, says she, me ver well remember dat he be ver goot man. Why, then, said the captain, Diana, what do you think of being made a christian as we are ? Me mak christian (says she) hou ! Why, says the captain, you know Mr. Davis taught you to read, and you learned to say your prayers : They are very good prayers, are they not ? to pray to God Yes, says she ; they be ver goot prayer ; me love dem ver gret much. Well, then, says the captain, are you willing to be good, and do as those prayers learn you to do ? Yes, said she, me be always ver goot, me be ver glad, me lern me prayer, me lern more, me tank you. So, by the captain's advice, I read the publick baptism of those of riper years, and baptised her ; she answering to the questions by the instruction of the captain ; and we christened her by the name of Elizabeth, which was the name of our ship. As soon as the ceremony was over, the captain ordered Elizabeth to dress the child in as decent a manner as she could, and bring it to his cabin : In the mean time we drank the bottle of wine. As soon as the child was dressed, Elizabeth carried it to the captain, who sent for Thomas Higgins, and told him that Diana was christened, and that he himself and the lieutenant were to stand godfathers to his son, and Elizabeth godmother ; and that it was to be christened ; and desired to know what name should be given to the child : To which he answered, his own, viz. Thomas. But I never saw such an alteration in any man in my life, as I immediately observed in him. So suddenly it appeared, that it surprized us all. For he, who before was dejected, even to the greatest degree imaginable, now appeared fully satisfied in his mind ; and conscience no longer seemed to fly in his face ; but he became full of mirth and jollity. So by the captain's order, I christened the child in a very decent manner ; the captain and lieutenant stood godfathers, and Elizabeth stood godmother. When the ceremony was over, the captain said, Tom, as this child was begot and born on board my ship, and I am its godfather ; and as it is now a christian ; I think it properly belongs to me (though I am not the father of it) to see it brought up in a christian manner, which, if it please God to bless me with life, I

will see performed ; and not only that, but will take care of it, if it lives, during my life ; and see it well educated. So the captain ordered half a goat to be roasted ; and he, the lieutenant and I, with Tom and Elizabeth, whom he permitted on that occasion, supped at his table, and were very merry : Which so rejoiced Elizabeth, that she immediately after supper, related what had happened to her fellow Negro woman, who was called Antiope : and they both went to Juno, and told her, that her son was baptized by the name of Thomas.

The weather here was extremely hot in the day time ; but there were cold dews at night, which were very dangerous ; for three of our men died in our voyage to the Gallapagos.

As we sailed, on the twenty-fifth at night, the sea very much surprized us, it seeming to be as red as blood ; which occasioned Stephen Jones, who was upon the watch, with some others to call us up ; for they had never seen the like before. When we came upon deck, we supposed it to be a great quantity of the spawn of fish swimming on the water ; it being very fair. Having passed the line, we made the Gallapagos on the fifth of July, where we anchored about a mile off the shore, in a good smooth sandy ground. We sent our boat ashore for water, but could find none. Some of our men began to be sick, but none of them died before we arrived at Puna isle, in Peru ; from whence we sailed a little way up the river Guiaquil, where we saw a great many Alligators, and sold some of our goods : But the Spaniards being jealous that we came as spies, and belonged to some other ships on that coast, which were Buccaneers, we thought it best to leave that place, having taken in some fresh water, and a few provisions, to serve us to the isle of Labos. We stood out to sea, and made the island of St. Clara, where we anchored on the tenth for that night (our ship proving crank, and sailing very heavy :) The next morning, when we were preparing to sail, we found that our ship had sprung a leak ; so that we were obliged to have one hand at the pump continually. Before we had sailed six leagues, the wind freshened upon us, and the sky looked extraordinary black at north east, and it moved towards us, which made us take in our topsails ; and afterwards we reev'd our mainsail and mizen ; at which time it began to rain, and poured down as if thro' a sieve. The sea seemed as if it had

had been all on fire, by the prodigious thunder and lightning. It then being night, the elements over head looked most dismally black, but all round the horizon was as red as blood: The waves which seemed to dash against the clouds, by the violence of the wind, sparkled like lightning, which, together with the thunder, made a terrible noise; at last breaking in upon our deck, it carried away one of our anchors; and we durst not bring our ship to the wind for fear of her foundering: it being dangerous, in a storm, to turn a ship backward and forward; so we were obliged to lie in the trough of the sea. But the wind and rain abating, we observed, to our great joy, a Corpus Sanct at the top of our spindle: These Corpus Sancts are good signs, when seen aloft; but bad omens and denote a great storm, when seen on the decks. It is a small glimmering light, like a star, when aloft; but when on the deck, it appears like a glow worm. It is the opinion of mariners, that it is a sort of jelly, incorporated by the wind, rain, sea vapours, and air; because it is never observed unless in stormy weather.

We sailed right before the wind, which was south-west, but were obliged to keep continually pumping till the eighteenth day; when we made the isle of Labos, about twelve at noon. That night we got safe into the harbour, and anchored, at twenty fathoms water, in clean ground, between the two islands: Here we resolved to careen our ship. Accordingly, observing the time of high water, we put her into a cove, in the southermost island, where we hauled her up as far as we could on the land; and our carpenter and all hands set to work the next day. This island is barren, and without fresh water. Here we killed several seals, sea lions, boobies, and penguins; a sea-fowl about as big as a duck, whose flesh is very ordinary food, but the eggs exceeding good: Here, also, we found a small black fowl, which makes holes in the ground to roost in at night, whose flesh is very good; and a great many vultures and crows. We had careened our ships, and were in readiness to sail on the twenty sixth, and sailed to the island Fernandos, and made the middle bay on the seventh of August, winter being just over there; which continues only for two months, *viz.* June and July. We have verbal accounts here of several men who have been left, or cast away, and have lived some time, and very well, on this island. Here we mended our sails.

There is plenty of very good fish of divers sorts. It is very pleasant on the shore, and very healthy; so that the men who had been ill on our voyage, perfectly recovered their healths; for the green pimento trees diffused a very agreeable and refreshing healthy smell all over the island. Here we spent some time in taking wood on board, and likewise in laying water up, which here is very good; we also boiled a considerable number of sea lions, of which there are plenty here: We had, also, plenty of young seals, which eat very well; only their livers are unwholesome. And at the south end of the island we found some goats of which we killed about thirty, which were excellent good. Here were also plenty of turnips and water-creases, which were of great service to us in curing the scurvy; of which we gathered a very large quantity.

So, having refreshed ourselves very well on this island, we resolved to steer for Cape Verde in Chili; on the 12th, made the island of St. Jago, where we anchored, and sent our boat on shore. Here we bought some hogs, and black cattle (for our voyage round Cape Horn to the Brazils;,) as also, some corn and maize. Here the people, from the ill usage they had formerly met with from the French, are extremely sharp, and really dishonest; for if they trade with you, and can't get the advantage of you which they think you would have of them, they will snatch your goods, and run away with them.

We weighed anchor on the twentieth, and sailed from hence round Cape Horn, in 51 degrees 15 minutes lat. as our pilot informed me, I being only a merchant on board, and therefore do not pretend to make a methodical journal, only as I promised to give an account of the most material passages in our voyage home. Round the Cape the weather favoured us extremely, and nothing happened that was material, only that we were chased by a pirate ship for about twelve hours, on the twenty-ninth; but the night coming on, it favoured us so that we lost her. On the fourth of September we made Falkland's island. Here we saw a great number of porpoises, which often leaped out of the water, of an uncommon sort. On the fifth we had the misfortune to have one of our men fall into the sea, as he was throwing the lead; and he was drowned before we could give him any help. We had very brisk gales at south-west. We sailed, and made Cape
St.

St. Antonio, near the mouth of the river de la Plata, in Paragua, on the twenty-fifth, the wind south by west; when we stood out to sea, and made the isle of Grande, on the coast of Brazil, on the twenty-ninth. We got a pilot, who conducted us into the watering-cove, at the inner-wester-most point of the island. In sounding as we went in, we hardly met, in any place, with less than ten fathoms water. The island is about nine leagues long, high land near the water-side: It abounds with wood, has monkeys, and other wild beasts: plenty of good timber, and fresh water, oranges and lemons. We had pleasant weather, but extremely hot. We here received a letter from our owners, commanding us home, and not to sail for New England as designed. Here we got beef, mutton, hogs, fowls, sugar, rum, oranges, and lemons (so that now we did not want good punch). During our voyage from the Galliapagoes, I applied myself to the perusal of my good man's memoirs, which I took very great delight in; and finding the whole series of his minor years attended with such a number of unaccountable accidents hardly to be paralleled, I thought proper, as I designed them to be published at my arrival in England, to digest them in a more regular manner than I found them wrote in his manuscript; but neither added nor diminished; nor did I in the least vary from what he himself had wrote, as to the accidents of life; only I made some amendments which I thought necessary; For his absence from England so long as fifty years, had occasioned him, in some manner, not to be well acquainted with the language as it is now spoken, and (by his living without any conversation so long a time) had made him, in some measure, forget his own mother-tongue. Though I really think, taking that into consideration, that his account was very polite; yet, had his life been published as in his memoirs, it would have appeared very obsolete, and difficult for to be read, though ever so entertaining. I accordingly collected all the passages of his first twenty-eight years together, and thought proper to make a book or part by themselves, that part of his life being different from his hermitical confinement on the island, which at first sight appeared so full of horror, and nothing but a prospect of the most miserable condition that could befall him. He no sooner looked round him, and, depending upon Providence, as a supporter of the distress'd, but he found almost every thing

thing necessary for human life on that small island; and he, who then thought of nothing but immediately perishing in the most miserable condition, has lived, by the help of divine providence, in a safe and plentiful manner; and is now so inur'd thereunto, that he despises the populous world and its vanities: he also considers its pompous glory to be of no more substance than a shadow; and that there is no felicity on earth, unless in solitude.

I likewise methodized his account, during his residence on the island, in the former manner; and made another book, or part; which with this account of my finding him on the island, and my conference with him, completes my design: so that it can't be called an imperfect description, but complete, in three books. So I return to my voyage.

In our voyage from Juan Fernandes we saw a very large bird, which is called an Alcatres: these birds spread their wings from eight to ten feet wide. In the Brazils is a serpent called Liboya, or the Roebuck Serpent, the report of which is incredible (in my opinion) but affirmed by some of the Portuguese; viz. that there are some of them thirty feet long, its body being as big as an hoghead, and destroys a roebuck at one meal. Here we trafficked for several sorts of drugs. We treated the Portuguese very civilly, who supplied us with all things necessary for our use. During our stay here, there arrived a brigantine laden with negroes for the golden mines. Here four of our men died, and three ran away from us, the last of which we had just occasion to be thankful for, rather than sorry; for Timothy Anchors overheard them discoursing, that they designed to mutiny at our next sailing, but were doubtful whether or no they might get enough on their side to over-power the captain, and his party; and, agreeing, among themselves, that it was a very difficult matter to become masters of the ship: and, besides, considering the hazard they run, in being punished, after such a severe manner as they should be, if found out by any means, before they could accomplish their design, or if they should fail in their attempt; made them rather chuse to desert the ship, than continue any longer. Though our captain was an extraordinary good man, yet rogues will be always employing their wicked thoughts; and neither clemency nor good usage can make them perform their duty in their stations.

The

The tenth of October, after having set Antiope, one of our negro women, on shore, who refused to be christened as Diana was, we began to sail, but kept Elizabeth and Juno on board; the captain resolving that she should live with him as his servant, and by that means would bring up Tom's child: we did not meet with any thing very remarkable; but after about twenty-four easy hours sail, we pass'd the tropick, and the next day saw land. We stood from it south south-west, and had close cloudy weather all night, with showers of rain. When day broke, we saw Ascension island, at about a league's distance; and about nine o'clock we came to an anchor. The sea is here very deep. The next day we weighed anchor, and sailing north north-east, till the seventeenth with a fresh gale at west, south-west, we crossed the line. The next day an ugly accident happened; for we brought a young bear from Mexico; and our men being often used to play with her and teaze her, it proved very fatal to one Thad Obrian, an Irish boy, of about sixteen years of age, who had been fretting the creature with a small rope, which he made a nooze to, and slipped her hind leg into it, and so worried her. Her blood growing warm, and she being enraged at his hunting her to and fro on the deck, where he happened to slip down: the bear immediately seized poor Thady by the neck with such violence, that, before any body could deliver him from her paws, the poor boy's throat was tore to pieces; so that he died instantly.

We sailed but very slowly now, meeting with continual calms, and directed our course for Cape Verde islands; but on the twenty-sixth we had a heavy tornado, attended with lightning, which fell as if the element had been on fire; but it continued only for a short time; afterwards the weather proved extremely fair, the wind being full south. A sailor going up to furl the main top gallant on the third of November in the morning, saw land, and supposed it to be one of Cape Verde islands, bearing north-west, and went with an easy sail till day-light, and made the island of St. Vincent; when, about nine o'clock, we anchored in the bay, in about five fathoms water, where we rode till the next day; and then we went to St. Nicholas, another, and one of the largest of the Cape Verde islands. These islands are so called from Cape Verde in Africa, and are mostly inhabited by Portuguese. One of them is called Sall: it derives its name from a prodigious

gious quantity of salt which is naturally congealed in salt-ponds. There are some poor goats on this island, and some wild fowls. Here are flamingoes, a large fowl much like an heron, but bigger, and of a reddish colour : they feed together in muddy ponds, or where there is but little water. They are hard to shoot, being very shy.

In St. Nicholas we traded with some of the Spaniards for ambergrease : but they were very fraudulent, having counterfeited it much. Here are some vineyards and plantations, belonging to the Portuguese ; and wine, much like Madiera, of a pale colour also, and thick. The people are swarthy, and the inhabitants live scattering in the valleys.

While we were at this island, we scrubbed our ship's bottom, and dug some wells on the shore, where we got fresh water. Here an ugly accident had like to have happened : for one of our men, going down into the hold with a candle, set fire to a bale of cotton, which, by his carelessness, had like to have been the loss of our ship : but, (thanks to God) it was discovered, by its smother, just before it began to blaze out ; so that by immediate help, we got it extinguished. Very soon after we hoisted it upon deck, for fear any of the fire should remain, and revive again ; and because we would have it in mind for our safety.

On the eighth we went to the isle of Mayo, another of Cape Verde islands, but made no stay. We saw at south-west, the island del Fogo, which is remarkable for being a vulcano, or burning mountain, out of which issue flames of fire ; but they are only discerned in the night, and then are seen a great way at sea : yet there are inhabitants on this island (as I have been informed by the Portuguese on the island of St. Nicholas) who live at the foot of the mountain, near the sea. There are also cocoa-nuts, plantanes, goats and fowls.

In the island of St. Aritanio, another of the Cape Verde islands, there is a very large spider (as I was informed by the same Portuguese) which weaves its web between the trees ; and it is so strong, that it is difficult for a man to get through. Here are also wild asses ; likewise salt-pits, where great quantities of salt are naturally made by the sun's heat ; with which they load yearly several ships
and

and are able to sell much greater quantities than they do, if they had but vent for it.

Having dispatched our affairs at the Cape Verde islands, we weighed with the flood, having a small gale at south south-west: On the seventeenth it began to blow, and veered to the south-west by south. That evening we saw three sail of ships at west north-west, bearing as we supposed, for the Canary islands, as well as ourselves. The night coming on, which was extremely clear and fine, we passed the tropick about the break of day; soon after which we observed a north bank lying in the horizon. We then provided for a storm, which those clouds denote. The wind was a north-west. We brought the ship under our main-sail and mizen only, and ballasted our mizen; but yet the wind and seas were too high for us, and every wave seemingly threatened to overwhelm us; so that we beat up and down with only our bare poles, which we feared would break in upon our deck, which must have foundered us, in case it had so happened: we also lowered our main-yard, and fore-yard, down a port-laft, as I observed the sailors called it, that is, pretty near the deck; and the wind blew so extremely fierce, that we did not dare to loose any head-sail at all: for, if we had, they certainly would have been blown away. During the storm, it rained exceeding fast, which continued for about four hours, when it changed, and was pretty calm; and we began to get every thing in good order. The wind that evening, changing to south-west, about six the next evening, we saw the pike of Teneriff, at about nine leagues distance. We saw some flying-fish and a great deal of sea-thistle swimming. We sailed all night with a small easy gale, and at break of day made the Canaries; bearing at north-west by west, about three leagues. We crouded all our sail, and came to an anchor, in the harbour of Sancta Cruz, in the island of Teneriff, on the twenty-first, about three fathoms water, black slimy ground in about half a mile from the shore. The land being for the most part pretty high, 'tis very bad going ashore here in boats; and ships riding here are often forced to put to sea, or slip their anchors, by reason the road lies so open to the east. Ships are here supplied with good water between the coves, where they generally water.

Sancta Cruz, a small town fronting the sea, has two forts to secure the road: here some English merchants reside.

reside. Their houses are low and uniform, covered with pantiles. Here are oranges, lemons, and other fruits; also flowers, and fallading; and a great number of pleasant gardens. At Oratavia the country is so full of risings and fallings, that it is troublesome to walk up and down in it: mules and asses are most used by them. Here grows the right and true Malmsey wine; here are also Canary and Verdone, or green wine: likewise a great many convents. Ships are forced to slip their cables, perhaps three or four times, by reason of the winds, and put to sea before they can take in all their lading. Here are wheat, barley, maize, beans, pease, apples, pears, plumbs, cherries, pomegranates, citrons, oranges, lemons, and several other fruits, excellently good; also horses, asses, mules, cows, goats, hogs, deer and fowl, both tame and wild, in great plenty. Provisions are dear on the trading islands, but cheap on the others.

Ferro isle is very remarkable: it hath no fresh water, only in the middle of the island, where there grows a tree; which being continually covered with clouds, from its leaves always drops great quantities of excellent water. These Canary islands are commonly the rendezvous of the Spanish West India fleet, where they generally receive orders for unlading their wealth.

From the harbour of Sancta Cruz, we sailed, on the twenty-fifth of November, to the Canary islands: here the soil is so fertile, that they have two harvests in a year. Its commodities are, honey, wax, sugar, and the best of wines; of which we took in a sufficient quantity of each: here are also, dragon's tree, which produces a red liquor called dragon's blood. These islands are exceeding wholesome, tho' they are inclinable to heat.

Having taken in the cargo which we designed from the islands, we sailed from thence on the third of December for the Madiera island, with a fair wind at south south-west, and saw several ships sailing towards the Lizard: The next day at eight in the morning, we made land, which was the Madiera, at about four leagues distance, and came to an anchor: Here are many fountains and rivers, which refresh the country. It is a very beautiful island, exceeding fertile, and produces excellent wine which is very strong. We anchored in the port; which resembles an half moon, not far from the town. Near this island is another not so large as this (which is about
sixty

sixty leagues in compass) called Porto Sancto, which affords much the same commodities as Madiera: Here we took in about thirty pipes of Madiera wine; and having accomplished our business, we left that island on the 10th, and sailed for the Lizard with a westerly wind. We had not sailed above six leagues, but it changed to north-east, and the sky began to be covered with small hard clouds, very thick, one by another, which we imagined an approaching storm: Accordingly we provided for it, by reefing our top-sails, and took in our sails as fast as possible. The wind began to blow a very brisk gale, and soon after the storm began; the wind still increased by squalls of rain and hail, which came very thick and fast, and the sea ran very high; so that we were obliged to run before the wind. We shipped little or no water, tho' some washed into our upper deck: and with some of the waves a dolphin was cast thereon. The wind blew very hard, but about eight hours after, it abated its fierceness, and then the wind veered to the west, and the foul weather broke up, and we had smaller gales, with some calms, and fair weather. On the eighteenth the wind veered to south south-east, which continued a brisk gale till the twenty-ninth, and we kept right before wind and sea, the wind still encreasing; and we made the Lizard on the twenty-seventh, at about three leagues, and stood in for the land, and came to an anchor in King's Road, January 3. 1724-5.

Thus I have given an account of our voyage from Mexico, as I promised, which I hope may not be offensive to any body; it being my intention to divert the readers, rather than displease them.

N. B. *The ship belonged to Bristol, I communicated the following memoirs to a friend in London, in order to be published; which if approved of by the publick, I shall at my return, be very well satisfied. In the mean time, I have business calls me to Peru and Mexico again; in which voyage I hope to see poor Phil. my good old hermit. And so I take my leave, and end the first part.*

Bristol, Nov. 6.
1725.

EDWARD DORRINGTON.

F

THE



T H E
E N G L I S H H E R M I T.

B O O K. II.

*An ACCOUNT of the birth and education of
PHILIP QUARLL; as also, the most surprizing
trarasactions of his life, from his infancy to his
being cast away.*

*Taken from the memoirs he gave to Mr. Edward Dor-
rington, the person who found him on the island.*



PHILIP QUARLL was born in the pa-
rish of St. Giles, in the year 1647. His father
Thomas Quarll, formerly a master builder,
having unfortunately ruined himself in build-
ing was at last reduced to work at the labo-
rious and mean business of bric kmaking : his poor wife,
also, was obliged to lay her hand to the labouring oar ;
so went a charing : which slavish and confining occupa-
tion robbed her of the necessary time to attend the fruit
of her conjugal affection, her beloved Phil. so that she was
obliged (while she and her poor yoke fellow were drudg-
ing

ing to get him bread) to commit him to the care of one kind neighbour or another, for a small consideration till he could prattle, and go alone; at which time she put him to school to a good old almswoman, where he continued till he was six years old.

One day a neighbour who formerly had the care of the child in his mother's absence, having contracted a particular love for him, being a very pretty child; finding him after school time sitting at his father's door, takes him by the hand, and leads him to his mother, then at work at an old lady's house in Great Ruffel-Street.

The house-keeper, who was naturally fond of children, seeing this pretty child, takes him up in her arms, and runs up to her good old lady who had just ended her customary private devotion.

The child, whom the poor woman kept very neat and clean, beyond what could be expected out of her small gettings, was naturally very handsome; being tall for his age, and well shaped; his features regular, and well-proportioned; his complexion fair; his hair long, and curling; his countenance mild, and sprightly; his behaviour gentle and easy: All which qualifications rendered him completely amiable, and made the old lady conceive an inclination for him uncommon for a stranger's child, especially of so mean a birth.

Thus having often kissed him, she wished he had been her own. But why, said she, can't I do for this lovely creature, tho' no kin to me by birth? Nature, who has endued him with qualifications so proximal and suitable to my inclination, has, by sympathy, made him related to me. His mother gave him birth, which, without prejudice to her own life, she could not refuse; now I'll give him education, the principal and most necessary care by which real love can be expressed to a child.

So, having given orders, that a good school might be inquired after, she put him to board to a master, whose most commendable character of instructing his scholars, in their duty to God and man, as well as in literature, had procured him a considerable number of children of the best families. There she intended to have kept him till he was, by years and learning, qualified for some genteel trade; intending to leave him in her will, forty pounds, to set him up, when out of his time.

But now ill fate begins to shew its averfeness to poor Phil's happiness: The worthy lady died suddenly, and was interred a few days after, to his unspeakable prejudice, and threatening ruin. But watchful Providence, who had decreed him good, averted the apparent evil, and only permitted some interception to her purposes, the better to raise his esteem of her succeeding favours, when sensible of them.

The master having conceived a particular love for the boy (whose uncommon docility, and extraordinary aptness in learning, had overtaken the rest of his schoolfellows, though of a much longer standing) was very much vexed at the thoughts of his going away to his parents, they being no longer able to continue his schooling: he was unwilling to part with the boy, and much disturbed to lose twelve pounds a year for a boarder. His love for the child, whom he had, in a manner, adopted for his own, would now-and-then rouse slumbering charity, whom self-interest too often casts asleep: Pity, said he, such blooming wisdom and forward learning should wither away for want of cultivation. Thus having pondered a while, love and charity, after a long struggle with interest, gained the victory: The old man concludes to give him his learning if his relations would only find him in board and other necessaries.

This being concluded upon by both parties, Phil. continued going to school for the space of four years longer; during which time, he made himself a complete master of the grammar, writing, and arithmetick; he also made a vast improvement in singing, having all that time been taught by a master, who attended some boarders three times a week; who, finding an extraordinary voice, and natural disposition in the boy, took a fancy to teach him: So that Phil. was, in some respects, qualified to attend the school, in the nature of usher, had his age permitted it. But as he was, as yet, too young to keep the scholars in that awe which is necessary in a school, the master only gave him his board, till the elder scholars left off, and he was grown bigger; intending then to allow him sufficiency to maintain himself as others in that station. But ill fate still attends the poor boy: The good old man died in less than a twelvemonth, and was succeeded by a superannuated nonconformist minister; who, having not so prosperous a school as his predecessor, had no business for

an assistant : so Phil. was a second time obliged to return to his poor mother (his father being dead) ; who, not being in a capacity to do for him, as his education and natural parts really deserved, proposed to him to learn some trade, in order to get his bread honestly and creditably, when she should be no more able to help him ; having by her hard working, and frugal living made shift to lay up five pounds, which she dedicated to that purpose.

Poor Phil. who had conceived a notion that there is a servitude and hardship entailed upon that station, was very loth to resolve upon entering into it ; but as he was a very discreet boy, not inclined to play, as children generally are, and seeing that there was a necessity for him to resolve upon something ; to make his choice the more easy, he consults the master's nature and temper, rather than the goodness and profitableness of the trade : And as there lived in the neighbourhood a locksmith, ever since he was born, who being great with his father, would often play with him when a child, and now and then give him farthings to buy fruit ; he chose to be bound to him ; which was done in about a month's time.

They both agreed wonderfully well, the master being very kind and good-natured, and the man as diligent and careful ; so that these fears of meeting with hardships being dispersed, he cheerfully worked on, without thinking the time tedious. But this happiness, though slight, is but of a short lasting ; for the poor man, having been bound for a relation who failed, had all his effects seized upon, and himself thrown into goal ; and poor Phil. in a year's time, was obliged to come to his mother again.

This accident was a vast disappointment to the boy's learning his trade, he being obliged to be idle, his unfortunate master begging that he would seek after no other ; hoping every day to make up his affairs, and carry on business again : So that the lad for want of employment would play about the streets with neighbour's children.

One day, as he was playing at leap-frog with other boys, there happened to go by one James Turner, an house-breaker, who taking notice of his activity, which much exceeded the rest, judged he might be of great use to him in the practice of his art. The meanness of his dress, which spoke him of no considerable family, gave him room to hope that he might easily get him : So ha-

ving stopt a while, he took the opportunity, that the boy, being hot with running and jumping, went to drink at a pump hard by. He takes him by the arm, saying, Do you mean to kill yourself, child, to go and drink cold water now, when you are hot? Come along with me, and I will give thee a draught of good ale: You shall only go a short errand for me. Will you master? the innocent boy answered; I'll go your errand if it's not too far: So followed him into an alehouse, in a blind alley, not far from thence, which he commonly used. Being come, he calls for a quart, and bids the boy take a hearty pull; which he did, being very dry, and the liquor as pleasant: This being done a second time, it began to creep into his head, not being used to strong drink; and in a little time he fell asleep on the bench on which he sat.

The seducer, thinking himself secure of him, leaves him to take his nap, shutting the door upon him, and charging the people of the house not to awake him, nor let him go away, when awake, till he returned; so went to get ready the implements necessary to set his evil project in execution; having determined to rob a rich merchant that night, in which wicked action he intended to make the harmless boy his chief instrument, by putting him in at a hole he was to break, and then to open the door for him, under the pretence that it was his uncle, who was so ill-natured as to lock him out, if not at home at the shop shutting-up.

Having got the tools, he returned to the boy, whom he found just awake, and very uneasy to go home, having slept till it was dark, being afraid to anger his relations by staying out late, contrary to his custom, being used to orderly hours, and would have gone away, had not Turner, whose projects would have been quite unhinged, used all the devices he was master of to persuade him. First he bespeaks a supper of that which the boy liked best, who since his being come from the boarding-school, had been used to none but coarse meat, his poor parent's abilities affording no better: Then, to divert away the time, he told him several stories, and, most particularly, that of his pretended uncle's unkindness to lock him out of doors, and of his cunning invention to get in at his own time, and unknown to him; but that he was afraid he must be forced to lie out that night, which would be his death, being not used to such hardship. The poor tender-hearted

ed

ed boy, who could scarce forbear crying, whilst he related this dismal story of his uncle's unkind usage, asked him what was the matter he could not get in that night, as well as at other times? Because, replied the fly knave, the poor boy that used to let me in is sick of the small pox, as I have heard since you fell asleep! What, can't you get somebody else! said simple Phil. I would do that for you, if I could tell how to get in my own home; for my mother goes to bed betimes, being obliged to get up early. As for that matter answered the subtle serpent, do not trouble yourself; I'll provide a bed for you. Thus having removed both that and all other obstacles the boy raised, he persuades him to stay.

But ever watchful providence rescues his ensnared innocence. Some hours before he was to go about the execution of that evil project, Turner was apprehended for a great robbery he committed the night before in Lime-street; and, the boy, being in his company was also carried before a magistrate. But the justice understanding, by the innocent boy's defence, he hardly was yet guilty of any robbery, having regard to his youth, and modest countenance, reprimanded him for his easiness of being drawn into bad company, and warned him to be more cautious for the future: So discharged him and committed Turner; who was hanged.

That accident, though very lucky by preserving innocent Phil. from being made accessory to a robbery which would have put his life in jeopardy, at the end proved fatal; he having thereby gained the character of belonging to some ill gang: For which reason no-body cared to be concerned with him, which grieved his poor mother.

The poor widow, (being left with her unfortunate son, who she feared would take to some evil way for want, which often tempers the most innocent inclined) not being able, out of her small gettings, to maintain him as when assisted by her late husband; and seeing no prospect of his master's coming out of prison, and being set up again; endeavoured to get him into some place to wait upon some of her mistresses: But the unlucky accident of being had before a justice of the peace with a notorious house breaker, frustrated her endeavours; so that poor Phil. was obliged to continue with his mother in a very mean condition, which his honest mother very much feared would induce him to evil company, of which the parish she lived in swarmed: But the good instructions which were
given

given him in his infancy, before bad examples could have made any impression on his mind, kept out of his thoughts all wicked devices. Thus, seeing no probability of amendment in the station he was in, he resolved upon going to sea, wanting for that employment neither character nor recommendation, which he was sensible would be a hard matter to get, by reason of this most fatal accident.

Thus, having imparted his design to his loving mother, who, with much reluctance, acquiesced in his going from her, and leaving his native country, where she once had hopes to see him well settled; she with weeping eyes, implores the Almighty to direct and receive him into his protection: And as she was acquainted with no one that could direct and advise him in that matter, she bid him go to St. Catherine's; there, said she, you may chance to hear of some captain or master of a ship, bound for some short voyage, who, perhaps, may want a cabin-boy; which is, my dear child, all that your age and strength qualifies you for: In a few years, with the help of God, you may find some advantageous opportunity to advance yourself by your learning. So, having given him six pence to bear his charges, with a tender kiss, she goes to her wonted occupation, and he strait to St. Catherine's, where providence had prepared a master for him; he being no sooner come thither, than a captain of a ship, bound for the East-Indies, taking a particular fancy to him, asked him whether he would go to sea; and that, if he was so disposed, he would take him to look after his cabin, and provide very well for him.

The gentle manner in which he spoke to the boy, and his mild countenance, made a vast progress in his affection: So having joyfully accepted his offer, he desires that he may run home, and acquaint his mother of it. The captain, having taken his name, and place of abode, gave him half a crown to spend with his mother, and then to come to him at the sign of the Black Boy, near the Iron Gate; that he need bring no clothes with him; for he would provide every thing necessary for the voyage.

The overjoyed boy, having told his mother of his extraordinary success, gave her the money, being in great haste to return to his new master: So having embraced his tender mother, and she her dear son, weeping over one another for some time, he leaves her at her work.

The

The good woman, though she had all the reason in the world to be easy in her mind, that the boy was out of those temptations which great want, and bad company, might lead him into, could not be reconciled at his going from her : But, seeing no remedy, she sends crouds of prayers after him, accompanied with showers of tears, recommending him to the care of heaven, to whom she daily made addreses for his prosperity.

Phil. who from his infancy had been used to be from his mother, was less disturbed at his leaving her. nothing but his new-intended voyage running in his mind ; so hastened to the rendezvous his new master had appointed him ; who, not expecting that he would return, was so glad to see him, that he went that moment and bought him both clothes and linen fit for the sea ; so equipped him anew cap-a-pee ; then took him home, and in a few days after set sail for a three years voyage.

During their sailing, Phil. whose agreeable aspect and temper had gained him all the ship's crew's love, being often with the man at the helm, soon learned the compass : and by the instructions every one strove to give him, in a little time he was qualified for a sailory ; which his master being made sensible of, whom he often diverted with his singing during that voyage, allowed him sailor's pay, the following voyage, which was soon after ; for in less than three weeks time the ship was new-laden, and set out again for the same place, and was gone as long as before ; at the end whereof it returned home richly laden, and in a shorter time than was common : Which being put in the news, as usual, prompted a certain number of Drury Lane nymphs to go down to the place where they heard the ship was arrived ; supposing that the lusty sailors, having a long time been confined to salt meat, would, at their arrival, being flush of money, purchase a bit of flesh at any rate.

Being come to Gravesend, where the ship lay, they found according to custom, the jolly crew in an ale-house, spending, like asses, what they had earned like horses, even before they had received it.

At the ladies coming, the elevated sailors, who had been sailing on salt water for the space of three years, and since set their brains floating in strong drink, for six hours, having lost the rudder of their reason, ran headlong upon those

those quick sands, where most of them lost all they had, before they could get off.

The ingenious ladies, who had more wit than honesty, improved the absence of their understanding; and being very expert in the art of fathoming, they fell to examining the depth of those shallow brained fellow's pocket's; which finding very low, they were much disheartened from going on, for fear of running a ground: But, understanding that their ship had not yet been cleared, they cast their anchor there, waiting for a fresh gale.

Mean time the merry sailors, fearing no storm, gave themselves up to sport; and, for better diversion, every man takes a playfellow, and goes aside, leaving bashful Phil. behind: who, being a stranger to the game they were going to play at, did not dare to put in for a partner: But cross fate still attending him, a snare is laid in which he must fall.

Every man, but modest Quarll, being gone away with a wench; one, being gone supernumerary, stayed behind. The crafty creature, who, from her first coming in, had fixed on the innocent young man for her quarry, kept at some distance from her comrades; waiting their absence, to work her design.

Unthinking Phil. having no suspicion of her cunning devices, lying intirely unguarded against her sly attacks, stood no long siege, but capitulated at the first summons. 'Tis true, she was provided with such artillery, as no fortifications against love could withstand; but would force the most stubborn to surrender, or at least parley, which is a fore-runner thereof.

Thus, having fixed her basilisk's eyes upon him, as being the first battering-piece the sex plants, when they propose a breach in a man's heart: she charges him with a volley of engaging words, whilst her looks and carriage offer him such prevailing terms, as no man of any feeling can refuse: Therefore being an exquisite mistress of her art, she soon obtains her ends.

Poor Quarll, whose heart, till then, had never been besieged, finding the invader more tempting than dreadful, she having a very agreeable shape, charming complexion, and most engaging features, surrenders up at discretion, and submits even to bear the yoke of matrimony; which, in less than an hour, is laid upon him; the chaplain of a
man.

man of war, who lodged in the house, happening to come in at that critical minute.

By that time, the absent revelling crew were cloyed with their mistresses, and had dismissed them with rough usage, and ill language, of which they are generally flush, when money is scant.

The disappointed wretches, seeing no redress for their treatment lately received, which they well knew proceeded from want of money, concluded upon staying in that place till their ship was cleared; by which time their appetite being sharpened again, and they flush of money, and hoping they would also be better chaps; they took a garret in a little strong-water-shop, where they made shift to kennel together, and live upon short commons.

Our new married couple, whose money was but scanty, were also obliged to put up with indifferent quarters but the hopes of receiving the poor husband's pay soon, and withal, the thoughts of being protected from a gaol, which she was in danger of before marriage, being the principal advantage she proposed to herself by having a husband, it made her now easy. But she, and all the rest of her companions were disappointed. The ship being unladen, the cargo proved damaged, by the leaking of the vessel, which is commonly made good by the sailors: So that, instead of three years wages being due, the poor men stood indebted to the merchants.

That disappointment put the unfortunate seamen, and especially the ladies, into a sad consternation; the former being obliged to go another voyage with empty pockets, and the latter to seek for cullies to support their extravagance, and to pay for new lodgings.

Phil. who, during the voyage had saved a little money, which his master gave him at sundry times, being disgusted at the sea, by the late accident, resolves to seek his better fortune in another manner.

His crafty wife, who was, by her marriage, screened from her creditors, depending upon her former occupation, indulged him in that resolution; so they set out with that little he had, and arrived pretty bare. Finding no friends in London, his master being dead whilst he was at sea, he resolves to list in the foot-guards for bread, having no other dependence; so consults with his spouse about a lodging, till he had quarters appointed for him. She, indeed, was best acquainted with the town, and knew of several

veral that would suit both stock and station, but durst go to none, having bilked most of them, and left a score with the rest. But lodging must be had before night; and the day was far spent: which set her a thinking, necessity being the mother of invention: And she, as is peculiar to women of her employment, being well acquainted with it, was no stranger to shifts; and presently finds one.

Having pondered for a short time, she concludes upon going to her last lodgings; where tho' she was considerably in debt, she questioned not but she should still find a kind reception, and that her landlady, where she had been about a fortnight, having given over her debt, would at her coming slacken the ill opinion she had conceived of her, and afford her kind usage: So, having fixed a rendezvous for her husband, she hastens there; where she found, as was expected, the old woman as overjoyed as surprized to see her; and much more, when she understood she was married to a sailor, lately arrived from a three year's voyage; who in a short time, would be cleared, and that then she would rub off her score. The old woman thinking herself secure of her debt, and sure of a good customer, bids her kindly welcome; and that she hoped she would take no other lodging, but in her house; that she would make every thing as easy and convenient as she should desire; being as welcome to score, as with ready money.

The subtle woman, having gained her ends, goes and fetches her husband, whom the over-reached old woman receives most kindly, expressing her love by a quartern of all fours, the chief commodity of her house: That, being drank, was succeeded by a second, at the new tenant's cost; which, being brought with a cheerful welcome to as many as they pleased encouraged the coming-in of half a dozen more: These warmed the company, and particularly the landlady; who having greeted Quarll for his most happy marriage, over and over, fell upon praising his wife, whom she had known for a long time; giving her all the encomiums that virtue itself could deserve.

In this manner they lived about a fortnight still upon score; which increasing very fast, and no prospect of money, it obliged the landlady to put them in mind; often asking when they expected the ship to be cleared. Quarll, who discerned, by the cloud which appeared over her brow, a threatening storm, begins to think of an harbour, and forthwith goes and lints himself in the foot-guards.

In that mean station, which is often the last spite of a surly fate, a continuation of misfortunes attends him : The company, where he listed in, is full of mercers and shopkeepers, who for a protection took on in the service, and quitted their pay to the covetous colonel, to be exempted from duty, which made it fall heavy on the effective men : But kind Providence, who ever limited the evil that attended him by fortune, ordered this its vexatious influence to turn to his advantage.

One day that he mounted guard out of his turn, being upon duty at the park gate next to Chelsea, about ten at night, the place being clear of people, he fell a singing to divert melancholy thoughts, which solitude is apt to indulge : at that time happened to come by a colonel of the same regiment, who being merrily disposed, stopped for several minutes to hear him sing : Quarll, having made an end of his song, fell a whistling the tune ; at which the colonel came to him, saying, how can you profane such a fine tune with whistling, when you can sing it so well ? pray let me hear you do it once more ; and grace it with that good voice nature has given you. Quarll, having made some few modest excuses, yields to his pressing sollicitation, and sings the same song over again, and with more care than before ; which so pleased the gentleman, that he stood half an hour with him, asking him questions : And, being by him informed whose company he belonged to, having his consent to be exchanged, he gives him five shillings to drink his health ; and charges him to come to him, at the Mitre tavern at Charing-Cross, the next day at eight of the clock in the evening, and ask for colonel Bonguard : so went away.

Quarll, being off duty, the next day went to the place, at the time appointed ; where he finds the colonel, in company with half a score more gentlemen, who received him with more civility and complaisance than is commonly paid to men of his coat : so having desired him to sit down amongst them, and the glass gone round once or twice, the colonel having praised his singing to the company, he was desired to compliment them with a song ; if he pleased, with that he sung to the colonel the night before. Quarll, having modestly told the gentlemen, he wished that his skill and voice, deserved the honour of their hearing, and that he would do the best he could, having, at their re-

quest, drank another glass, he sung the song they desired to their great satisfaction and applause.

After a short space of time was spent in the praise of singing, and a talk of what an engaging accomplishment it is, either in man or woman; some of the company, holding that the charms of musick are no wise inferior to the power of love; it occasioned a very agreeable debate; there being in the company a gentleman unfortunately under that circumstance, who would give love the supremacy over all that can affect our minds: seeing it strips a man of the benefits of his own senses, of the strength of his reason, and soundness of judgment. No object is fair, but that whose idea hath impressed the mind; no harmony heard but in the beloved voice, or that which sounds its praise; dainties have no flavour in the absence of that which every thing relishes; the fairest days are but dull, if not enlivened by the light of the charmer's presence.

Thus he ran on, till the company, perceiving he was beginning to be uneasy, desired Quarll to sing the gentleman a love song, who spoke so much in its praise; which he did, and pleased the lover so exceedingly, that he made him a present of half a guinea. The gentleman, who was altogether for musick, having asked Quarll whether he had any thing in the praise of it, having also his request answered; made the rest of the company crave a song in the commendation of what suited their inclinations; some being for a bottle, others for roving, and others for a country life.

Quarll, being provided with such songs, entertained them to their desires till supper was brought up; which being over, the company who had been so well diverted with his singing, consulted together to do him service: And, as he was well qualified to teach, they proposed to recommend him scholars. A gentleman in company, having a sister, who intended to learn, he writes a letter to her, desiring she would make use of no other master: And as his regimental clothes might lessen her opinion of his merit, he bids him, before he goes, to call at his lodging, and he would present him with a suit of clothes, which he wore but part of last summer, and therefore little the worse for wearing. And, as he wanted but an hat to be completely dressed (having an extraordinary handsome head

head of hair) another gentleman bids him call on him for one; so that he had all he wanted to set him out.

The gentleman having given him directions where to go for the things, and the colonel his promise to get him discharged out of the company he did belong to; at least, to have him exchanged into his own; they every one gave him their crown apiece: so they departed, bidding him not fail coming hither again that day sevensnight.

This unexpected, but lucky adventure, like a sudden surprize, unframed his reason, and makes poor Quarll overlook the only obstacle that could obstruct his blooming happiness. Thus transported with seeing himself master of more money than ever he was worth before, and in a fair prospect of advancing himself; he hastens home, and in the guard-clothes, in which he ought not to be seen there; being a dress obnoxious to most, and more especially to creditors.

His landlady, who, till then, had been made to expect her money, thinking he only waited the ship's being discharged, to go another voyage; seeing him in that hope-killing dress, gave a shriek, as if she had seen the devil: slanders and abuses, striving for utterance, croud in her foaming mouth; and, like a rapid torrent, which, running from a large extent into a narrow channel, swells, and overflows its banks; so her passion, finding her mouth too small a passage, breaks out through her eyes: Thus, having shriek'd and roared a while, which occasioned all her lodgers to come down, she charges poor astonished Quarll with shoals of abuses, in the vilest and most insulting terms the most inveterate malice can express.

Thus having exhausted her stock of slanders, her tongue having uttered all the evil she could, she set her mischievous hands to work upon his wife; who, being come to see the occasion of her shrieking, stood like one bereft of her senses: so, having torn her head clothes off her head, with words suitable to the barbarous deeds, she thrusts them both out of doors; which though the rudest action that could denote the unmercifulness of her intended revenge, was to them at that time, the kindest act she could perform.

That unexpected treatment was no small check to Phil's cheerful disposition, but having considered, that one time or other, he must have stood the shock, he rejoices that it is over; and being free from the care of getting her paid,

he has at that time nothing to think of but to find another lodging ; which being then too late to go about he concludes to wait for morning at a certain cellar at Charing-Cross, which is open all night. Going along, she mildly blamed him for his unadvised coming in that dress, which, he might imagine could produce no better effect. To which he answered, he never could have wished for better : For, by her turning him out of doors, she had paid herself ; which he would have done had he stayed : But now he was come away, being better provided, and in a better way, he would have better lodgings ; so told her of the adventure, which much rejoiced her ; and from that time made her resolve to forsake her former way of living, which misfortunes only drove her to, being not led by evil inclination, as many are. The morning being come, whilst she went to seek for lodging, he went for the clothes he was promised the evening before, which fitted him as if made on purpose, and made him appear as one of the genteel employment he was recommended for. Being new shaved and powdered, he went with the letter, according to order ; and was received suitably to the recommendation given him. The lady, being just up, made him drink chocolate with her ; then, having required a song, she agrees with him for a guinea a month, the usual rate, and gives him a guinea at entrance, as 'tis common ; so began that very morning, promising to recommend him to a lady, who had two daughters ; which she accordingly did, and sent him thither the next time he came.

This fair prospect of an handsome and genteel living, which he always was desirous of, made him forget his past misfortunes. Thus joyfully he returns to the cellar, where he had spent the night before, and where he had appointed to meet his wife, after she had fixed upon a lodging ; who accordingly came in less than a quarter of an hour, hoping she had pleased her husband, which she resolved for the future to endeavour. She sat down, expecting his coming, not knowing he already waited hers ; his change of dress concealing him from her, not expecting to see him in so different a garb from that which she left him in : which he perceiving, comes up to her, and takes her by the hand, going to ask her the success of her walk ; but she putting it out of his power, in an angry manner bidding him go about his business, having none with her, prevented his speaking. His silence, which she took to proceed from bashfulness

bashfulness, occasioned her looking him in the face ; in which discovering her dear husband's features, to whose natural handsomeness his genteel clothes were no small addition, she was seized with such a surprize, that it struck her speechless for some minutes.

Quarll, discerning her disorder by the fading of her fresh complexion, was as much surprized as she. Thus trembling he takes her in his arms : My dear, said he, what's the matter ? Are you not well ? having recovered her speech, she embraced him, saying, How can I be ill, when my dear heart and soul appears so well ?

These kind words and the return of that flush which first kindled love's fire in his heart, inflames it afresh ; hardly can he govern his new rais'd passion : Thus, giving her a kiss, my love, says he, have you got me a lodging ? Yes, my dear, replies the loving wife ; you shall ever dwell in my heart. But I want to lie in your arms, answers he ; that can't be done here. Well, then, said she, I have provided a fit place. So, having each of them taken a dram, they went away.

Sally, who till then was a stranger to real love, now feels its true smart ; and tho' she has for some time enjoyed the fruition, the only bliss pains-taking lovers aspire at for the reward of all their toils and labours, and the happy shore love's compass points at, yet she seems uneasy, as expecting something more : she cavils with time for flying too fast. Whole days and nights are too short for her to behold her dear, she continually bears his image in her heart, and wishes she could for ever have him in her arms ; which from that time she consecrates to chaste embraces ; devoting herself wholly to the diligent and assiduous practice of the necessary qualifications in a wife, to render an husband truly happy : the execution of which wife and virtuous resolutions, gained her the tenderest and most sincere love and affection a really fond husband can shew or express to a darling wife.

They lived in that truly happy state about half a year, at the end of which, cruel fate, envious of his uncommon happiness, most barbarously robs him of it, almost as soon as he had savoured its incomparable and matchless sweets.

One summer morning, loving and truly observing Sally, knowing her husband delighted in flowers and greens, went to Covent Garden, in order to buy some to garnish

her windows and chimney, being the only things wanting to complete the neatness of her lodging, which she kept in the greatest order. As she was going, she most unfortunately met with the perjured knight who deceived her out of her virtue, and with whom she had lived a considerable time, in expectation of his fulfilling the promise he made her, when she put him in possession of her maiden-treasure; who, being glutted with his sacrilegious theft, most basely and ungratefully left her destitute. Fain would she have shunned the fatal principal and origin of her past misfortunes, and hellish motive of her late evil life, which she mortally abhorred and zealously renounced: but inexorable fate has decreed her ruin; she can no wise avoid him; he was too near before she perceived him, and had hold of her hand ere she could shift it out of his way.

Being thus suddenly stopped by him, she would have embraced the severest death, to avoid the vile seducer, by whom her innocence was first betrayed. The irreconcilable antipathy she had conceived for the mortal enemy of her newly retrieved virtue, being startled at his terrifying appearance, set her whole faculty in an uproar, and scares away her senses; not so much as a word left her to express her trouble.

The amorous knight, whose late love for the fair Sally (whose regular living had repaired those charms her former lewd life had very much damaged) was revived, and grown more passionate than ever, flattering his hopes with the thoughts, that her present disorder proceeded from joy and surprise, took the opportunity of an empty hackney-coach which was going by, to bring her to his lodgings: so, having stopped it, he puts in the poor dispirited woman, altogether insensible of what was done, or designed; but having, with the shaking of the coach, recovered a little spirit, and finding herself so much in his power, as aimed at her total ruin, she gave a loud shriek, which occasioned the coach to be stopped by some people that were going by; but his protesting he had no other design but to take her to a friend's house till she was entirely recovered, representing also the danger of exposing herself by opposing his kind intention, being then near a street where he and she had lived together a considerable time, in some measure pacified her: so having put his head out of the coach, he tells the people who stood

stood by, that his wife, who had been lately overset, was afraid of the like accident, which made her scream, so bid the coachman drive on ; during which time he entertains her with all the marks of a passionate love, swearing over-and-over, he was her slave for ever ; and that now kind fortune once more brought them together, none but death should sever him from the person he loved so dear ; and that he should expire in those soft arms which often gave him life.

Those fond expressions, which the formerly had given credit to, are now upbraidings and reproaches for her too easy credulity, and only increased her hatred for the deluder ; which, at that time, she thought proper to conceal : thus, restraining her passion, she assumes a feigned calmness, and mildly returns him thanks for his love, which she cannot indulge, being married. Married ! said he, and I living ! was you not mine ? I was, indeed, replied she, blushing with anger and shame. But what was I ! I tremble to think on't. Why, said he, my love and heart's delight, and shall be, whilst breath keeps it in motion. Oh ! false man ; said she, weeping most bitterly, repeat not these deluding words, which betrayed my virtue. Come, said he, cease that flood which overflows my soul with the bitterest of sorrows, and reprieve the most penitent of men from the cruellest of deaths : my submissive observance of your inclinations shall henceforth atone for all past given displeasures. Mean you, said she, as you speak ? by all that's sacred, I do, replied he. Then, said Sally joyful, set me down here, and I'll forgive what's past. No, my dear, this being a request I cannot in honour grant, I may, without breach of promise refuse ; I must see you quite re-established first.

By this time the coach was arrived to the directed place, which proved to be an house where she had last lived with the knight ; which being open, and the landlady at the door, obliged her to go in without resistance ; fearing it would be of no use, but rather prejudicial to her design : so she quietly went in, hoping she should have a better opportunity to get away, after she had made the landlady understand that she was married. But the fordid wretch hoping the knight would lodge there again, who proved an extraordinary beneficial lodger before, went out of the room, and left her to his pleasure.

Poor Sally, seeing herself at the point of being a second time undone, there being no one to assist her within, nor hope of any help from abroad, the room she was in being backwards, next to large gardens, and distant from the house, and therefore out of hearing ; gives herself up to despair, seeking the opportunity of laying hold of his sword, on which she was resolved to fall, rather than yield to his adulterous desires. Thus, whilst the knight was labouring to express the height of his love, by the most endearing terms, and prevailing words, the most passionate lover could invent ; she, of a sudden, snatched the sword from his side, and turned the point thereof towards her breast, in order to execute her barbarous, though virtuous resolution. What do you mean ? said he laying hold of her arm. To get myself at liberty, said she, which you basely refuse : so falls into a violent fit, which lasted some minutes ; which was no sooner over, but it was succeeded by another, and so on, for the space of three hours ; at the end of which time she was so faint and weak, that her life was despaired of, and so continued all day ; which made the knight repent that he had forced her to stay ; so much against her will ; heartily wishing that he knew where she lived, that he might send her home ; which she not being well enough to tell, the landlady, by the knight's order got the best room in the house fitted up for her, and the bed being warmed she was carefully laid in it, and a doctor sent for ; who, having felt her disordered pulse, said, her indisposition proceeded from passion and grief, and ordered that she should be let blood, which would give her oppressed spirits a present relief. The physician was no sooner gone but the surgeon was sent for, to perform the doctor's orders, which gave her immediate ease, and in a little time caused her to sleep, which lasted all the night.

This great and sudden amendment much rejoiced the most afflicted knight, who made a vow not to leave her till she was restored to her wonted health ; sitting up by her all night.

The next morning, Sally, whose good night's rest had in a great measure recovered both strength and reason, finding herself in a strange bed, and from her husband, was again seized with surprize, which did much threaten a relapse. Heavens ! said she, by what enchantment am I here ! what fiends could ravish me out of my dear spouse's

spouse's arms ! then, seeing the knight stand by the bed side, she gives a loud shriek : oh ! vile ravisher ! said she, is it then by another of your hellish stratagems that I am again betrayed into your power ? at which she fell into a violent fit of crying, — No, most virtuous woman, replied the knight, falling on his knees ; it is by accident, of which I own myself to be the most miserable occasion, for which I heartily ask both heaven and you pardon. Then he relates the whole matter, which the late illness, her excessive grief and passion brought upon her, had made her forget.

That woful relation did but add to her trouble, by heightening her grief. Oh ! said she, with a fresh shower of tears, how can I now look my dear husband in the face, when my very justification turns to my shame ?

The knight, who was in as great a consternation as she could be in, takes her hand, which lay motionless out of the bed, and, bathing it with tears, begs her to forbear terrifying his most penitent soul, promising to rectify all past wrongs : you remember, my life, said he, the vows I made when first you gave yourself to me : I renew them now, and would fulfil them, but that it would expose you to the rigour of the law : therefore I'll only, for the present, settle five hundred pounds a year upon you for your life, till, by your husband's death, I am impowered to make you lawful mistress of all my estate. Pray compose yourself, and sedately consider on't, and when 'tis come to a conclusion, I'll attend for your answer : so withdrew for a while.

This generous offer, expressing the sincerity of his love, for whom she had formerly more than a common esteem, in a great measure appeased her passion ; the offered atonement disarms her revenge : she now pleads for him she had condemned, and blames herself for the crime she had charged him with. How could I, said she, think my virtue safe in his hands, on whom love has such an ascendant (which is itself guilty of as many faults as it covers) if he went away with my heart it was but a breach of trust : besides, his absence was no flight, it being occasioned by business.

Having made these reconcileable reflections, and being at the point of accepting his offer, conscience starts, and opposes her resolution : her husband stands in the way, rigged in all those engaging qualifications which had won
her

her affection. This, coming into her mind, in a manner scares away her reason; she can't help loving both: her love for the knight pleads seniority, and that for her husband justice. The first is attended with interest, the last is prompted by virtue. The debate is great, and both their arguments strong: reason is called to decide the matter, which, having (as 'tis her custom) sedately weighed the cause, examined both accidents and incidents, at last seems inclinable to favour the love for the knight; but justice, who is always in the right, will not resign it; peace and content, the only motives worth contending for, must be consulted. They, being also cautious of giving a rash verdict, examined on which side they were in most safety; and finding themselves most screened from upbraidings and reproaches (their mortal enemies) for the knight, gave it of his side. So justice, who seldom gets its due, is forced to drop the cause, and tacitly withdraw.

The knight's offer, being the softest choice for an easy and quiet life, which she could not reasonably expect from her husband, who doubtless would, from the late accident, conceive an ill opinion of her virtue, (which altho' at that time blameless, she could not with modesty vindicate) having sent for the knight, she speaks to him after this manner:

I have had so much reason to repent my being too credulous, by the many vexations it has occasioned me now, that should I, upon the bare repeating of broken promises, expose myself to the same, you yourself could not but blame me. Indeed, dear Sally, said the knight, interrupting her, I own you have sufficient cause to question my sincerity; but I will this moment remove it: So that moment sends for a lawyer, and makes the proposed settlement; then gives orders that a mercer should be fetched for her, to take her choice of the most modish silks, and then for a silk night-gown, for her to wear till her clothes were made: as also for all manner of linen, shoes, and stockings. Then having new rigged her from top to toe, now, said he, my dear you are entirely mine; give me directions, that I may send your husband what he can challenge as his own; so writes the following letter:

S I R,

“ S I R,

“ Left the absence of her, who unthinkingly gave herself to you for a wife (tho’ not at her own disposal, being mine before) should cause you any farther trouble, these are to satisfy you, that I have re-taken possession of my own; to send you back her clothes, as being all you can claim a right to.

“ I am yours,

“ R. S.

Having sealed up the letter, and bundled up the clothes, a porter was called, to whom orders were given, to carry the bundle and letter to the most perplexed and concerned Quarll, who spent the night in unspeakable torment. A thousand dismal accidents glared at his alarmed fancy, which created new racks for his tortured soul. He tumbles on his bed like an unmasted ship tossed about by a violent storm, cursing the tedious hours for creeping thus in the dark night; taxing the sun with sloth and nature with unkindness. Thus like one bereft of his senses, and quite void of reason, he snarls at the whole creation.

At length the long-wish’d-for day having sent forth its dawn, to proclaim its approach, he starts from off the bed whereon he lay as if upon thorns, and like a mad man, runs about to inform himself of what he dreads, more than death, to know. But having spent several hours in diligent enquiry after lately b-fallen accidents, without hearing of any; jealousy creeps in, which in some measure removes his former fears, but no-wise lessens his pains. Thus he returns home as much racked as before.

Being arrived, he finds on his table a bundle, and a letter, which his landlady told him were brought by a porter. His impatience to know the contents of both were equal; but the bundle being more surprizing to him, he precipitately opens it first; which finding it to be every individual part of the clothes his wife had on the day before, when she went out; with the surprize, he lets it drop out of his hands, and like one thunderstruck, remained speechless for several minutes. Then fetching a deep and heavy sigh, attended with a shower of tears, he
bitterly

bitterly exclaims against himself for questioning the faithfulness of that love, of which he now has such fatal proofs.

Thus, concluding she had drowned herself, and that the letter would inform him of the cause thereof; he takes it up, saying, O that thou hadst been a timely forerunner of the fatal tidings thou art bearer of! Yet for her dear sake that wrote it, I'll peruse thee, tho' thy contents be but racks for me, and the most cruel tortures that ever were or can be invented.

But great was his surprize, when he found it to come from a man; and inexpressible his confusion at the contents: His senses are all in an uproar: he blames his eyes for not seeing right; his apprehension for mistaking the meaning: His blind love taxes his reason with rashness, the mistaken expressions being but illusions proceeding from an oppression upon the intellects: So lays down the letter till his disturbed mind was better settled. Yet he cannot be easy; he must with some other writing, try whether his eyes are still defective: On which, finding no fault he hastily takes up the letter again; but alas! it was the same as before. My judgment, said he, has been as much wronged as my love. So, after a few considerations, calling to mind, that as an accident had procured her to him, he ought, without reluctance, to surrender her again; having made a resolution never to venture any more on that uncertain state, which commonly promises happiness, but often brings sorrow: He shifts his lodging, and goes to live where he was unknown, the better to pass for a bachelor; in which free station he enjoyed peace undisturbed, and pleasures uncontrouled, for the space of twelve months: But cross fate still pursues him; he must again be fettered, and bear yet heavier chains than before. A second mate is allotted him, who, though very chaste, dooms him wretched, being short of other qualifications necessary in a wife to make a man happy.

This woman had been bred from her infancy under the care of a lady, whose two daughters Quarll taught to sing, and had lived with her in station of a chamber-maid, ever since she was big enough to officiate in that place; during which time, having behaved herself to her mistress's content, she gained her affection; so that this good lady, being desirous to advance her maid, whose age fitted

ted her for marriage, the chief settlement for a woman, she cast her eyes upon her daughters' singing master, who she thought would make her a good husband, having observed him ever since he came to her house, to carry and behave himself very decently. Thus having declared her mind to her, who had already a great inclination that way, she readily submitted to her lady's will, who promised to bring it about.

The good lady having conceived the principal means to bring her designs about, took the opportunity of Quarll's next coming, to propose it to him, promising to make her worth three hundred pounds, which was the only motive that could engage him to break the resolution he had made. The young woman being also very agreeable in her person, and extraordinarily obliging to him he readily accepted the offer.

The old lady, having so far prevailed upon him, is resolved to push on till quite concluded; so has them married in less than a week, and gave them lodgings in her house, where they continued but one month. The new-married wife, thinking herself, in some measure, under confinement whilst in the good lady's house, to whom duty and gratitude obliged her to be more than indifferently observing, being likewise somewhat ambitious of living great, persuades her husband to take a house and furnish it; which being done according to her desire, they went away from the kind old lady to live by themselves, without considering the expence of housekeeping, which they both, till then had been strangers to, but, in a little time, became too well acquainted with.

The three hundred pounds being gone in furnishing the house and paying two years rent, and as many years wages to a couple of maids, one whereof she kept in the station she herself had but lately overcome: Quarll was obliged to reduce his charges, and level his expences to his income; so discharges the superfluous servant, whose business was only to indulge her indolence, and increase her pride.

That sudden lessening of her attendants checked her ambitious disposition, in such a manner that it threw her into the spleen; which was like to have cost him more money in doctors, than the servant's wages which he endeavoured to save.

Being taken very ill, and knowing not what to complain of, a doctor was granted, at her importunity, rather than her need; who, being come, and finding her indisposition lie in her temper, rather than in a defect of nature, ordered her medicines to make them both in the same condition.

Her strength decaying, and the apothecary's bill increasing, which are the usual effects of imaginary illness, made her husband apprehensive, that considerable charges might accrue from her fanciful and imaginary distemper, which he would not indulge; and feared to check too suddenly, lest it might produce some other ill effect: So, in compliance to her natural pride, he promises her going in the country, as being a proper expedient to save his money, and to be rid of a grunting companion, at least during the summer.

This proposal, suiting her ambition to imitate quality (who, for the generality, go out of town about that time of the year) was soon accepted of; and that opportunity of being freed of one of the greatest plagues that can befall a man, by him as soon approved.

Phil. having got her in the mind, was no wise dilatory to get it performed; but made diligent inquiry about the most convenient place in the country, for remoteness and cheapness; which being informed of, he forthwith takes horse; and having found a good old countryman, with his wife and daughter, in Yorkshire, whose diligent cares and frugal living, whilst young and strong had been rewarded with a moderate competence, to keep him from toiling when grown old; who, having a pleasant and commodious habitation, distant from meddling and inspecting neighbours, and room to spare, were very glad to take in a gentlewoman to board, being some company for them in their remote living, and therefore stood upon no rate: which suiting Phil's circumstances and wishes, he began to consult on a means to keep his wife there for a constancy: And as he well knew she never would consent, nor he be able to force her to it by violence, he applies to stratagems. Thus, having given her the best character he could to the old people for good humour, he tells them, that indeed she had one failing, but that it was not troublesome, provided one give her her way: She is very vapourish, and looks for great attendance: O dear! that's quality distemper. Well, if that be all, replied the old

old folks, she shall not want for any one thing. More, said he, I must caution you of, which is this: She will soon be tired of her lodging, and will be for returning to London; so will seek all opportunities to steal away, if she finds herself opposed in her desires: Therefore 'tis best not to contradict her directly, but to be sure watch her narrowly lest she gives you the slip. Never fear, replied the good people; we'll take care of that: She never shall go one step alone. She is not apt to lay violent hands upon herself, and do herself a mischief? No, no, replied he, there's no danger of that; you may trust her alone within doors at any time, but never abroad. One thing more I must give you notice of: that is, when she finds she cannot get away, she'll be for sending letters: I charge you, let her have no paper, only at first; to write to me once, or twice, or so; and that you'll guess, when proper, by her railing, which will be a token of her being discomposed: And, as for her diet, she is something dainty; but I see you have plenty of poultry, which she loves very well. O dear Sir, answered the old woman, she shall have fish, flesh, and fowl, when she pleases. We have a fine pond in the ground, well stocked with fish; and cocks and hens enough, you see, about the yard; and for butcher's meat, 'tis but two or three hours ride to the next town.

So Phil. having agreed, and paid one quarter, beforehand, which he promised to do whilst she boarded there, he returns to London, in order to fetch his wife; who having projected a greatness of living in the country, which she was disappointed of in town, immediately inquired into the appearance of the house, the handsomeness of the lodgings, and the gentility of the neighbours: To which questions Phil. took care to answer suitable to her inclination. So, having concluded to go the next day, they went out to make provision of such things as cannot well be had in the country; as Nantz brandy, ratafia, usquebaugh, coffee, chocolate, and such things as were necessary for genteel company.

Being provided with every thing, they set out the next day; but, as neither lodgings, house, or neighbourhood, answered her ambition, nor his commendations, he contrived to arrive in the night, that she might not find the deceit; and as the good people of the house, according to

direction, shewed her abundance of respect, giving her the title of lady, and a good supper being prepared: she inquired no further into the matter. The next morning, Phil. having represented to his spouse, it would be of prejudice to him, if he staid any longer from his scholars, having already lost six days, took his leave of her, and left her in bed, it not being her usual time to rise: So having promised to be with her in a short time, to see how she liked her lodgings, he returned to London, having first renewed his charge to the good people of the house, of giving her her humour; and, above all, not to let her go out alone, nor consent to her coming up to London; which, in a little time, he questioned not but she would be very desirous of.

Phil. being gone, the old people, according to their charge, were extraordinary diligent and careful in pleasing their new lodger; who finding her ambition gratified by their observance, kept in that day: but the next morning, having a fancy to walk out, the young woman of the house took her to see the ground and cattle which belonged to them, as being the principal things she could shew her; there being neither house nor habitation, but their own little cottage, within sight. She, who thought her lodgings to be in an handsome and creditable house, near a genteel neighbourhood, with whom she might converse; finding the reverse of her expectations, could not conceal her passion at the disappointment; but falls a railing against her husband in such a rage as frightened the poor young woman; who, doubting she was going in one of her fits, ran home with as much haste as she could, to fetch her father and mother; who, being come, were as much frightened as their daughter, at her furious countenance, the blood being ready to start out of her face, and her eyes out of her head. Thus, fearing she would grow unruly, each of them took hold of one of her arms, and so, in a manner, dragged her home; where, being come, they would have laid her upon the bed: But she, who took this act of their caution for an effect of their careful attendance, told them, that indeed she could not find fault with them: and that their habitation might suit their birth; but really it did not hers, which her husband very well knew; and therefore she never would forgive him for bringing her thither, and that he should soon know: So
desired.

desired them to give her paper and ink, if the house could afford such a thing.

The good people, who had been cautioned to give her her humour in that at the beginning, having none at home sent the boy that attended their sheep on horseback to the next town for them; then, leaving her to compose herself, they retired to bewail among themselves her misfortune, which they perceived to be the effect of pride, reflecting upon the happiness of their own condition, and the pleasure of a contented life.

" * Now, said they, she has been brought up in a city,
 " where excess of pleasure and luxury are made the only
 " means to arrive at content; but alas! how widely do
 " they miss their aim! Their life is a continued series of
 " cares; their emulation and vanity in fashions, enter-
 " tainments, and such like, together with their insepara-
 " ble companion, envy, only contribute to make an un-
 " happy life still more miserable. Here this gentlewoman
 " wants for no manner of necessaries to make a life com-
 " fortable, but has rather a superabundancy. Could she
 " reject that horrid pain causing quality of pride, and
 " learn a little humility, 'tis that brings content, and
 " sweetens all the misfortunes of this life. How prefer-
 " able is our station to hers! How solid is the pleasure
 " we enjoy in this solitary habitation, compared to the
 " trifling joys the great ones possess in the most populous
 " cities! O happy fields, and silent groves! where no-
 " thing but eternal rounds of pleasure centre! Here no
 " debaucheries, riotings, fashions, and luxurious enter-
 " tainments; no envy of others good fortune, no drunk-
 " enness, swearing and blaspheming the mercies of the
 " Almighty God, ever take place, as in flourishing cities;
 " but Providence gives us all things with a bountiful
 " hand: In short, we have all we desire, and more than
 " we justly deserve. Here the beautiful birds, joyfully
 " H 3. " hopping

* N. B. The lines marked with (") are set down word for word with his memoirs, for these reasons, 1. I thought it a pity to alter any thing from his notions of the pleasures of a country life. 2. And the rather, because it gives us very lively ideas of the perfect happiness he enjoys in his solitude.

"hopping from bough to bough, stretch their tuneful
 "throats, and warble out melodious anthems to their
 "great creator's praise; whilst flowery hills, in harmoni-
 "ous echoes, repeat the same to the fruitful neighbour-
 "ing vales. Here's nothing to be seen or heard but uni-
 "versal acclamations of praise to the great God of all
 "things. This is the real solid pleasure; this is that
 "makes us perfectly happy. For how much more eligi-
 "ble is the company of irrational animals, or even inani-
 "mate things, than the society of men, who have divested
 "themselves of all things but shape, whereby to distin-
 "guish them from the most deformed brutes, or, indeed,
 "from more horrible devils? This gentlewoman has put
 "us in mind of our own happiness, of which, before her
 "coming, we were almost ignorant; but now we may see
 "that happiness consists not in riches, nor content in gau-
 "dy apparel. — But why do we tarry here? It is not
 "proper to leave the gentlewoman so long alone, lest, in
 "one of her fits, she should do herself a mischief: There-
 "fore let one of us go to her." So the good woman of
 the house went to her, and, finding her in tears, used all
 possible endeavours to divert her melancholy, but all to
 no purpose; for still she was interrupted by exclamations
 against That Villain, that Rogue, her husband. The
 good woman, finding that words could not prevail,
 thought a glass of ratafia might do better; so desired her
 to comfort herself, and take a glass of her cordial; to
 which she soon consented, and after that four or five
 more, which had the desired effect; for her melancholy
 was by this time turned into most violent fits of the spleen,
 and presently into drowsiness. The landlady, perceiving
 her condition, desired her to lie down, and refresh her-
 self by taking a little sleep: So, laying her down upon
 her bed, and watching her to sleep, retired.

After she had slept an hour or two, she awakes, in a
 very splenetic humour, and calls to know the reason why
 pen, ink, and paper were refused her. Indeed, said the
 old woman, we did not know that your ladyship was a-
 wake; and we did not care to disturb you: but I'll bring
 it to you presently: So went and brought it. Which she
 no sooner received, but she began to write the following
 letter.

Most

Most barbarous of men,

WAS you afraid that my indisposition (for which you most deceitfully did persuade me to leave London) would not kill me quick enough itself, that you have decoyed me to an oven, the dulness whereof is sufficient to make any well-bred dog pine itself to death; here not being a rational creature to talk to, but the insipid folks of the hut; who being stript of their clumsy human shape, will be as complete brutes as their oxen and cows. Pray see that you forthwith fetch me hence or expect to incur all the resentment an injured wife can shew as soon as arrived to London, where I shall surely come in a few days, though I was to travel all the way barefoot.

Yours, &c.

MARY QUARRELL.

This letter being wrote, the good people of the house were in a great consternation, whether they ought to send it, or not; but, after some consultation about the matter, they concluded it should go, lest the husband should take it amiss.

Quarrell, who expected some such letter from his haughty dame, as soon as she had discovered the cheat, had, with a great deal of judgment prepared the following answer.

My, dear,

IF your pride and vanity do outrun your reason, it is no argument my compliance to them should hasten my ruin: And if

if you consult my circumstances as I do my ability, you'll not discommend

Your careful husband,

PHILIP QUARLL.

And with that, one to her landlord and landlady, whom he thanked for their care of sending the letter ; but desired they would not trouble themselves with sending any more, nor give her opportunity of writing, seeing it did but aggravate her distemper ; and, above all things, to have a particular care she should not give them the slip, and he would take care to gratify them for their trouble.

This obliging letter, together with a present of a pair of handsome green stockings, and lemon-coloured gloves to the daughter, did so win the old folks affection, that they were extreme punctual in observing his orders : But that to his wife had a quite different success ; for, instead of putting her into consideration, it set her in such a violent rage, as would scarce permit her to read it throughout : So, tearing it to pieces, she storms out, " Consider my circumstances ! vile wretch ! let him behold my portion, " whether it deserves me no better a being than an hovel ! " Landlady, send immediately to the town, and get me " a place in the stage against to morrow ; for I'll go and " tear that villain to pieces."

The good woman was not a little displeased to hear her thus despise her house, which was the best within a mile round ; but as she imagined it was the effect of her vapours, instead of vindicating her house, which though old and low-built, was tolerably large, and very convenient, she seemed to acquiesce with her, wishing it had been better for her sake : But as for sending to take a place, it was then too late ; for by that time a messenger could be got to town the office would be shut up ; but that the next time she went out, she would take care a place should

should be taken: so excused it for that week. In the mean time she gave her her humour, being very respectful and observing; which suiting her pride, made her something more easy, and in some measure diverted her raving fits; for she fully depended on the week following, but was again disappointed by some mishap or other, and so from time to time; till at last she began to doubt of their giving orders, meaning to keep her there: Thus resolved to go herself; but not knowing the way, she desired somebody might be sent along with her; which they were ready to grant, but never could be had, being always out of the way, about some business or other.

This continuing for the space of a month, or more, and none was coming from London, she began to think it was a contrivance of her husband's to be rid of her with only paying for her board and lodging, which she understood he had done beforehand, and agreed to do so during her stay, which very probably, might be for her life; but resolved to disappoint him by privily stealing away, and at adventure seek out the road to the next town, not questioning but she should find somebody as she went that would direct her: But the old folks, having been warned of such an enterprize by her husband, were too vigilant to give her an opportunity of attempting it, never leaving her by herself from the time of her getting up to her going to her bed again: Which over-attendance convinced her of her imprisonment.

Then finding herself curbed in her ambition, disappointed in her pride, and tricked out of her liberty, without hopes of being relieved; the letters she sent to her friends being intercepted; she falls into a passion suitable to her case and disposition; which, having vented upon the people of the house for abetting and adhering to her perfidious husband in so traitorous a deed, her spirits being exhausted so prodigiously with raving, that nothing but a cordial dram could ever have brought them to their usual tone, and which she by long experience knew, calls for her grand specific; and, after she had drank three or four refreshing glasses, she became more easy, and retired to rest: When, having slept a few hours, she awakes something better composed. Thus, considering that all the resentment she was capable to shew could not mend her condition; she therefore concluded to make her landlord
and

and landlady her friends, that if she did not enjoy her liberty, as she proposed, she might at least enjoy a little more content in her confinement.

Thus she resolved, and indeed kept her resolution a long time; laying aside her haughty temper, and curbing those violent passions she had so long accustomed herself to, she now began to be much more familiar and condescending, than what she had hitherto shewn, to the great joy and surprize of the good people; who by this strange alteration, were in great hopes her madness was wearing off; and, upon that account, were extremely industrious to humour her in every point; using her with all the good manners they were capable of: which she easily perceiving, thought to make use of their credulity to her advantage; for she was a woman of quick penetration: And finding how egregiously those ignorant people had been imposed upon, in relation to her phrenzy, saw the only means to regain her liberty was, to pretend a recovery. And, accordingly, by a counterfeit change of temper, endeavoured to persuade the people into a good opinion of her; telling them, she could never requite their extreme good services to her during her indisposition; and lamenting her own unhappiness in being so troublesome and fatiguing to persons of so kind and obliging behaviour. They, in like manner, answered, that if their poor services had contributed any thing to her ease or recovery, they were sufficiently made amends for all their trouble.

Now the scene was intirely changed; the raving, proud, ill natured gentlewoman became the most pleasant, sociable, and best natured person they had ever met with; And they, who just before conceived so great a dislike to her, were now so delighted with her company and conversation, that she was less alone than formerly, they always contriving some diversion or other to drive away her melancholy, and to prevent a relapse; hoping to send the welcome news of her perfect recovery to her husband: frequently pleasing her with odd country tales, shewing her all the pleasures their fields, gardens, and orchards could afford, with many other little contrivances to pass the time away; while she endeavoured to divert them with the comical adventures of the Londoners. This she endured almost a whole month, with all the seeming good nature imaginable; but finding herself in no way to procure her enlargement, and rather more strictly guarded
than

than formerly, resolved to obtain her liberty by stratagem, which she designed in the following manner.

There was a servant in the house, whose name was Thomas, and a lively, brisk, fresh coloured, young man, indeed a fellow of admirable sense, and good manners: This spark was of a very amorous disposition, well versed in intrigues, and extremely obliging in his temper and behaviour; who, as soon as he saw Quarll's wife, began to think of his former way of living. Now this young fellow was born in London, of very mean parents, whose friends not being able to give him a trade, he was obliged to enter himself a member of the ancient and honourable society of lacqueys. His first service was to a widow gentlewoman, where he learnt all the necessary qualifications of his employ; but his mistress being a very religious woman, going to church two or three times every day, where he was obliged constantly to attend her, and so much gravity not suiting his mercurial temper, soon obliged him to quit his post. But he, being an arch wag, and sly knave, soon advanced himself to be footman to a young nobleman. Here he began to shew his genius; for his master, being a young gentleman very much delighted with love-adventures, frequently made use of him in those cases; and, finding him to be of a sharp, ready wit, very careful, and well skilled in taciturnity, soon made him secret messenger in ordinary to all his intrigues; in which station he behaved himself admirably well, having all the accomplishments necessary for so weighty a trust, viz. vigilance, dispatch, and secrecy; and these so well managed, that he seldom failed in his designs. This post of honour he enjoyed for a long time, with great credit and reputation, and gained so great a share in his master's affections, that he likewise made him first minister to all his affairs.

Now Tom is arrived to the very summit of his fortune; regaling himself in all kinds of pleasure, beloved and trusted by his master, honoured and respected by his fellow-servants, and, in short, might be said to be perfectly nappy. But here that jilt, which so long flattered him with her kind embraces, at one fatal blow moves all the means whereby he ascended, and pushes him from the lofty precipice to the deepest sink of poverty imaginable.

Tom's master being a lover of variety, his curiosity prompted him to see the diversion of a country wake, in
order

order to start some fresh game ; and to that purpose, disguises himself like a plain country gentleman, and equipped his man Tom in the same garb, on purpose to make him his companion in his adventure. This place where the wake was kept, was about ten miles from the nobleman's seat ; so each mounted his horse, and away they rode : When, being arrived at the town, nigh which they were to hunt their game, they both alight, and put up their horses at an inn ; and, having pulled off their boots, out they walk towards the place of rendezvous : As soon as they came within sight of the place, they beheld the fields prettily bespotted with different companies, both young of boys and men, at as many different diversions. In one place a parcel of wrestlers, eagerly contending, with broken shins, for a pair of gloves ; in another, a company of cudgel-players, with battered ribs, fighting for a laced hat ; some at one game, and some at another : But Tom and his master, who cared for neither broken shins, or bloody brows, resolved to seek out softer combatants.

After they had walked up and down the field, seeing the several diversions ; Well, Tom, says the young nobleman, where's our diversion ? Where are all our girls got to ? O, says Tom, we shall be in with them presently. Hark ! I hear the noise of cat-gut ; and I warrant we find them there. So, following their ears, instead of noses, they came to a most spacious dome, vulgarly called a barn ; which they no sooner entered, but Tom says to his master, here, Sir, here's variety for you ; here's nymphs of all sorts and sizes ; and, faith, of all complexions ; they're all clean and neat ; all fit for the game : Come, Sir, pick and chuse : Which pretty smiling rogue must be your nymph ? Come, let's see what you'll do ; for I long to be at it. Do you long to see what I'll do ? says the nobleman ; why, I intend to work miracles ; I shall make my nymph a goddess, before I leave her. Well then, replied Tom, I suppose I may take the privilege to make my girl a nymph, at least.

While they were thus talking, they stood like two hawks hovering over their prey, not knowing on which to fix their fatal talons, and the rusticks staring at them with open mouth, and distended nostrils, not knowing what to think of them. At length, Mr. Scrape, by tuning his melodious batter'd fiddle, summons all the girls to readiness,

ness, each preparing her feet for the sport; while every Hob began to seize a partner, and Tom and his master (in the mean time, you may be sure) were not idle: For, offering their service to a couple of cherry-cheeked rogues, as Tom called them; the innocent girls very gladly accepted their offers, little dreaming their wicked intentions; but the mischief was, the nobleman had got the girl which Tom had the most inclination to; which caused such a secret envy in his breast, that became the fatal cause of his unfortunate disgrace.

Now the dance was begun with great fury on both sides; the girls ramping and tearing, and the fellows pulling, and haling, and shoving, and kissing, and tumbling like so many devils, while Tom and his master, being strangers to such kind of diversion, stood like two images, and the country fellows mocking them: which Tom observing, and seeing his partner very dull, thought they should never out-do him in caterwalling: Therefore; shrugging up his shoulders, and rubbing his eyes a little bit, he began to be as brisk as the best. The nobleman, observing his man's alteration, thought proper to follow his example; so pushing down two or three girls, fell upon them, and kissed them till they were almost stifled: then, hoisting them up, extends his mouth to a full yawn, and laughs as loud, and with as great a grace, as any of them; while Tom, to shew his activity jumps about a yard high, always taking care to light upon somebody's toes; which generally put the whole company into a loud fit of laughter, except the person hurt; who, in compliance to the rest, was obliged to put her mouth in a grinning posture.

Thus they became the most facetious companions imaginable (every one praising the two gentlemen's good humour and activity) and, in short, became the wonder of the whole company. But Tom and his master having tired themselves and their partners sufficiently, began to think of retiring, in order to refresh their wearied limbs; and, motioning the same to their nymphs, the poor girls very willingly accompanied them. Now they thought themselves secure of their intended sport, and conducted them, for that purpose, to the inn where they had put up their horses.

As soon as they were set down, they ordered wine to be brought, and a supper got ready in order to detain
I and

and intoxicate the girls if possible ; and therefore they plied them very close with liquor : Now Tom's partner, being a brisk lively girl, never refused her glass ; but the nobleman's was of a very mild easy deportment, and would drink but little : He, seeing her temper, began to be very amorous, on purpose to try what that would do ; but she, in so sweet and easy a manner, checked his rudeness, that it raised in Tom a most violent passion for his master's partner. At length, supper was brought to table, which was no sooner over but night began to appear : The two girls, perceiving the time, desired leave to go home, which the nobleman absolutely refused ; but Tom, thinking to make sure of his game upon the road, consented to go with his partner ; which the other hearing, begged not to be left alone, but that she might go likewise : The nobleman (thinking he had not brought her to the desired pitch) as heartily desired her to stay, vowing that nobody should wrong or hurt her ; but when the other gentleman returned (meaning Tom) they would both conduct her home : So by mere dint of argument, prevailed upon her to tarry till Tom's return.

Now Tom, as soon as he had got from town, began to attack his fort, which after a little parley surrendered at discretion ; so Tom razed the walls to the ground, entered the castle, and took possession of the city : All which being transacted, he leaves her, promising to revisit her the next day, and bends his hasty steps towards the inn, with a deal of impatience ; muttering these words, as he went : " What a blockhead was I to let my master be too nimble for me ! Ah ! fool that I was, to lose so delicious a morsel, and take possession of so easy a fool ! " who, as soon as asked, consented : When the other, with all the pretty engaging airs, so modestly checks any thing that looks like rudeness. Well, faith, since it is so, I'll make the best on't, and try whether I can't chouse him of his partner : " So said, so resolved, and indeed so done.

For, as soon as Tom came in, the girl claimed their promise ; saying, the gentlemen was so rude, that she would stay no longer ; desiring them either to go home with her, or let her go by herself. But Tom, desirous to renew the sport, begged of her, with all the prevailing arguments he was capable of, to tarry ; telling her, he was a little tired with the walk he had taken, and wanted

to refresh himself : So desired her to stay, while he only took a glass, and he would go with her. The girl very unwillingly complied, and sat down again. The nobleman, finding he had no mind to part with her, imagined he was bringing about what himself had so long endeavoured in vain ; and therefore pulling out his watch, he starts up in haste, and says he must needs go, for it was past the time that he promised to be at a certain place : So tells the innocent girl he very unwillingly left her ; but he hoped this would not break their new acquaintance, for he would pay her a visit in a short time, desired to be excused for this time ; and he believed he could prevail upon the other gentleman to conduct her home. Tom, who understood his meaning, follows him to the door, and there receives his charge, which was, that he should bring her to a house they both knew, about three miles off, as soon as possible : So took his leave, mounted his horse, and went thither, impatiently waiting for his prey.

Now Tom was extremely pleased with his master's intentions, resolving to put the bite upon the biter, and, as soon as the nobleman departed, began to attack the fortification with all the artillery wine and soft words could supply him with : But the defendant, proof to battery of this kind, held out nobly a long time, and moved strongly for a cessation of arms, desiring leave to go home : But Tom, acquainted with the various turns of intrigues, resolved not to lose his game, being well assured he should bring her to articles in a little time ; and began a fresh attack, which lasted so long, that she was obliged to cry for quarters ; but it being too late for going home, Tom persuaded her to lie there ; assuring her, that he would see her well provided for ; and so, in short, she blushing consented.

Thus Tom having gained his point, orders a bed to be got ready : and then desired his mistress, who was by this time, much overcome with wine and sleep, to go to bed. The poor girl (still between doubt and fear) knew not what to say, but, trembling, denies what her looks desired ; and, after a great many arguments on both sides, she resigns herself intirely to him. The sly knave, joyful of his prey, conducts his mistress to bed ; but as they were going, the old crafty inn-keeper cries, in mere form, I hope, sir, that's your wife, for I would by no

means have any thing dishonest done in my house. Yes, yes (says our rogue) you may assure yourself it is my wife, or else I should not have offered to go to bed with her, while the poor girl, hiding her face, ran up stairs as fast as she could.

They had not been long above, when the nobleman, uneasy at their delay, returns to the inn, and inquires after the couple he left. Why, Sir, said the host, they're a bed. A-bed! says the nobleman, a-bed! Yes, answered he, it being too late to go home, they took up their lodgings here. What! are they a-bed together? said the gentleman. Yes, says the inn-keeper; I left them together. The noblemen, hearing this flood like one thunder struck, his eyes darting lightning, and his blood all in flame; but, bridling his passion very coolly inquired where they lodged, saying he had some business of moment to impart to the gentleman, and he must that minute speak to him. The inn-keeper unacquainted with his design, very complaisantly conducted him to their apartment; and knocking at the door, told Tom the gentleman was returned, and wanted to speak with him. Tom not being yet undressed, knowing his master's fiery temper, and the just resentment he was sure to meet with, opens the window, and out he jumps, without saying a word; and, having bruised himself with the fall, lay some time upon the ground; till, recovering himself a little, he precipitately got over the garden wall, into which he had dropt from the window; and scours over the fields as fast as he could, without ever looking back.

But having run himself out of breath, and thinking himself out of danger, down he sits, reflecting upon his melancholy circumstances. "O miserable wretch!" says he, "what have I done? How dare I ever see my master, who always reposed his trust in me? And I, like a perfidious villain, to deceive him! Certain death attends me, if I go home; and, if I tarry here, there's nothing but beggary or starving; I have at once lost all credit and reputation, and see nothing but ruin, unavoidable ruin. O woman, woman! cursed bewitching woman! what an infinite number of mischiefs are ye the source of! But why do I exclaim against a woman so innocent, and so charming, when I, the traitorous deceiver, sought nothing but her eternal misery? O just heaven! 'twas you that saved her from
"impending

"impending ruin, and deservedly threw all the fatal effects upon myself: Well, I'll bear them patiently: load me with all the evils you can bring, till they mount so high, you can lay no more." Raving and cursing in this manner, he tired his spirits and fell asleep.

Having slept some time, he awakes, wondering where he was; "Did I dream," says he, "or is it real? No, it must certainly be true; I am the most wretched mortal breathing; the very same ruin I intended the poor innocent girl, has justly fallen upon myself; and what is become of her I know not, nor dare I to enquire; but I hope as heaven has hitherto protected her, it will likewise preserve her from all the evil intents of my master." Reflecting upon himself in this manner, he walked about till day-light, not knowing what to do, or whither to go: He was now a great way from London, destitute of friends or acquaintance, little or no money in his pocket, and durst not see his master. Despairing in this condition, he saw a company of hay-makers going to work; it being summer-time; and resolves to make one of their number, if possible; hoping by that means to keep himself from starving, and work his passage up to London.

With this resolution he attacks the hay-makers, asking them from whence they came, and whither they were going: Which they answered very civilly, telling him they came from London, and were going towards the north of England: So, being balked in his expectation of coming to London, along with them, he knew not what to do; but at last resolves to go along with them, hoping to meet something in his way that might make his journey pleasant; so tells them his resolution to make one amongst them: But they, seeing a man genteely dressed petitioning for a poor hay-maker's place, took him to be only in jest, and told him they should be glad of such a companion, if he spoke as he thought. He protested to them the sincerity of his intention, telling them his misfortunes drove him to such low circumstances. Then they said they should be very glad to serve him, and that their master would be in the field by-and-bye, and he would hire him, for he wanted hands: So he went with them, and tarried till the old farmer came, who, finding a well-dressed young fellow wanting an employment of that kind, asked him a great many questions, which Tom answered

very pertinently : The farmer, therefore, taking it only as a frolick, was willing not to balk him, and so hired him, saying he might go to work that very day, if he would; but Tom, wanting a fork, told him, that, as soon as he could get his tools in readiness, he would come ; so hires a man to go to the next town to buy him one, with which, as soon as bought, he falls to work very pleasantly.

Tom went with them from place to place, conforming himself to their customs in every point, being a very merry companion, and much beloved by his fellows : His present life became much pleasanter than his former, never inquiring after his master, or country girl, nor did he know what was become of them.

At last, it fell to his lot to be hired by the farmer he then worked for; who, seeing him a tractable, brisk young fellow, asked him whether he would be his servant; for he then wanted one. Tom, after a little hesitation, told him he should be glad of such a master; so struck a bargain, and hired himself for a year.

Tom had not been there much above half a year, before Quarll's wife came down thither, who, being a genteel London madam, reminded him of his former intrigues, and raised in him an inclination for her; but, being in so humble a station, he dared not to attack the haughty dame, till he might find a favourable opportunity: and so took all occasions to oblige her, and was better respected by her than any of the others, she often saying, that that fellow had a certain *Je ne scai quoi* in him that at once claimed love and respect. Tom, understanding this, thought time would certainly bring about his purpose; which not long after happened in this manner.

Tom, during her alteration of temper, had more liberty of converse than before; and often diverted her with entertaining stories; and one day, being along with her, opened to her the whole of his fortunes and misfortunes, which she heard with great attention and pleasure; for Tom had never before discovered himself to any; but thinking to gain credit with this gentlewoman, made her only privy to it. When Tom was gone, she began to reflect on the fellow's dexterity; and, believing him well skilled in all kind of adventures, thought he might be a fit instrument for her escape, and resolved to advise with him

with him about it: Accordingly the next day took an opportunity to call him to her again, when she was alone, desiring him to divert her with some of his merry tales, telling him she was then very melancholy. Madam, says Tom, I am sorry I should find you melancholy; but I'll do all I can to please you. Ay, says she, if you knew the occasion of my melancholy, you would pity me, as well as be sorry; but you cannot be ignorant what a prisoner I am made here, how constantly I am attended, and have scarce any thing but brutes to speak to: I can assure you that this usage is enough to make me as mad as the people take me to be; for I never was brought up in this manner, which my husband knows; it is only a contrivance of his to keep me here a close prisoner, if possible; but I'll deceive him: for if a woman's invention can find any means to escape this cursed place, he shall be sure to see me in London quickly, and that to his great mortification.

The sly rogue heard her very quietly, and thought he might now have his desired ends: So tells her she should be released that very night, if she pleased, and he himself would accompany her to London; for he longed to be there again: She was glad to hear him say so: and asked by what means he intended to convey her thence. O Lord! says he, easy enough; I'll tell you how: I'll take a ladder, and set it against your window, and so come into your room, and take your clothes, and every thing you have a mind to send to London, and carry them to a particular acquaintance of mine; then I'll come back and fetch you, and conduct you to the next town, which is not above five or six miles off, and stay there for the stage coach, and so both go to London together. The gentlewoman, willing to get her liberty at any rate, agreed to the proposal, only desiring another day to look after all her things, and pack them up conveniently, because she would not hurry herself, lest they should mistrust, and stop her journey.

Tom consented to what she said, and wished for the approaching time; which being come, and all things in readiness, he brings the ladder, and mounts up towards the room; while she as readily delivers him from the window all her baggage ready packed up; which Tom takes, and carries away, and presently returns to fetch the gentlewoman; who, overjoyed to think herself freed from
that

that tiresome place, gets out of the window, and began to descend the ladder; but being over-eager, and not used to enterprizes of that kind her foot slipped, and down she tumbles, ladder and all, which Tom seeing, knew the consequence, and ran away as fast as he could, leaving Mrs. Quarll to get up by herself; for the ladder in tumbling, broke the windows where the old farmer lay, and made an horrid noise, so that it scared the good man out of his sleep, who got up to see what was the matter; and, perceiving the gentlewoman's window open, and a fellow running across the yard, cries out, Murder! thieves! thieves! which alarmed the whole family; some getting pitchforks, some pokers, some one thing, some another, in order to scare the thieves; but the old man, with his fowling piece in hand, like a noble commander, led the van, searching all his house over for thieves, and to see what he had lost, carefully looking into every hole and corner, not daring to advance too fast, for fear of a surprize; and coming to Mrs. Quarll's room, whose window he had seen open, calls to her a long time; but hearing no answer, fancied she was murdered, and therefore breaks open the door, and searches the room; but there was no Mrs. Quarll to be found; they stared at one another, not knowing what to think. However, when they had examined all the house, they boldly sallied into the yard to hunt the thieves there; and looking about, they perceived something under the ladder, which looked like women's clothes; so taking it up, they pulled from under it a real woman, something like Mrs. Quarll; and looking more narrowly, perceived it to be the very same individual person, almost dead with the fright, and the bruises she had received.

And now their greatest wonder was, how she came thither: The old man said, he believed that some thieves had gotten into the house, and, to prevent her crying, had stopped her mouth, and thrown her out of the window. But, says another wiseacre, how came she to have her clothes on? I am sure she ought to have been a-bed. Now, adds he, I believe the devil tempted her to throw herself out at the window; and that must certainly be he you saw run cross the yard so swiftly. Thus they disputed a long time, but at last agreed, that she ought to be carried to bed again, and have care taken of her: and so carried her up-stairs; and then went to finish their search
while

while the good old woman and her daughter undressed her, got her to bed, and sat up with her all that night.

After all was finished, the old man, willing to know what quantity of men he had lost, calls a general muster; and, missing Tom, wondered where he was got to, asking if he lay at home that night: They told him, no; but they believed he was gone a sweethearting. A sweethearting! says the old fellow: well, let him be there always; for he shall never come hither again: How do I know but he has sent the thieves to rob me, or that he is one of them himself? If ever he comes hither, I'll turn him about his business as soon as I see him. But Tom understood better things than to come thither again; for he knew the adventure would be blown, and then he should certainly be discarded with disgrace; so was resolved to make the best of what he had got; went away, and was never heard of again.

Mrs. Quarll, as soon as come to her speech, confesses the whole intrigue, and lays the blame upon her husband; saying he sent her thither to be murdered; and now he had his desired end, only that she was the unhappy cause of her own death. The old man, as soon as he knew the matter perfectly, writes to her husband a full account of the whole story: telling him he was in a fair way to lose his wife; and that if it should so happen, he had no occasion to send for his wife's clothes, for she had before lost them; and tells him by what means. Phil. as soon as he had read the letter, was very much troubled at his wife's folly; but resolved, if she recovered, she should tarry some time without clothes, which he knew would be punishment enough to her pride: So writes back to them, that they should take all possible care to restore her to her health, and likewise to prevent any thing of that kind for the future; telling them, that in a little time he would send her some clothes, and make them amends for their trouble.

Mrs. Quarll, in about a month, began to be upon the mending hand; which her husband being informed of, resolved to make her stay another month without clothes, which he knew would be a greater punishment than the other month of sickness. But here he was mistaken; for it was almost three months before she perfectly recovered; who, finding that, before that time, her husband had sent her

Her some fine new clothes, was, in great measure, reconciled to him; and resolved, during her stay there, to be much more easy in her mind than before.

The good people, whom she had often scared with her outrageous passion, were very glad to see her so calm, and took that opportunity to represent to her the happiness of her condition; being well attended, and as well provided with all necessaries, free from that subjection she might be under, if with her husband, whose cross and ill humours she would be obliged to bear with: Besides twenty other vexations incumbent to a married life, from which she was screened by his being from her.

The old woman's wife remonstrances, being backed with the sudden arrival of a fresh supply of several sorts of choice drams, as also the ensuing quarter's money for her board, and the season rendering the country extremely agreeable, made her patiently submit to continue there till the fall of the leaf; against which time she would contrive some way or other to go, if her husband did not come for her.

But Phil. who ever since her being in the country, had enjoyed the uncontrouled pleasures of a single life, having no mind to interrupt them by her presence, took care to secure her there; sending her guardians now-and-then fresh charge to be watchful over her, and a small present to encourage them to it.

But surly fate, who was ever averse to his happiness, suggests a new interruption thereto. Phil. having given over house-keeping, happened to come and live at a mantua-maker's of vast business and reputed worth money. She was a single woman, pretty handsome, but intolerable proud and conceited; which was the cause of her being still unmarried, thinking herself too good for any tradesman, or any thing below a gentleman; which seeing no prospect to get, being courted by none, she became a general man-hater: But Phil. who was a handsome young man, and of a genteel employ, tho' not a gentleman, coming to lodge at her house, reconciled her to the sex in a little time, and made her change her resolution never to marry, heartily wishing he would court her: Therefore by her more than common attendance for a lodger did all she could to give him invitation, but all to little success; for Quarll, who had been already twice incumbered in the troublesome state of matrimony, and but lately

lately rid of his last plague, had no mind to venture any more; so did not answer her expectation; but her love increasing daily, without being taken notice of, she was obliged to declare it to an old gentlewoman, who lodged in the next room to him; who, having doubtless been in the same condition, was, by experience, capable to give her advice.

The old gentlewoman (as 'tis peculiar to them, when past the sport themselves, to love to promote it in others) took upon her the management of that affair; and from that watched the opportunity of speaking to him, which was only in the morning before he went out, or at night when he came home, being abroad all the day beside: So, having resolved upon it, the next morning she leaves her own door open, which was opposite to his, waiting his coming out, to invite him to a dish of chocolate, which she had ready for that purpose.

Having according to her desire, got him into her chamber, as he was drinking his dish, she feigns a fit of laughing. You wonder, said she, what 'tis I thus laugh at; but, I dare say, you'll laugh as well as I, when you know: Why, our man-hater is in love at last; in love up to her ears, as sure as you are alive. Our man-hater, Madam! says he: who is that? Don't you know? replied she: Why, our landlady, who has refused so many fine offers: Lord, how happily might that woman have married! She might have rode in her coach years ago; but no man was good enough for madam: This had such a fault, and that another: In short, none could please her: 'Tis true, indeed, she is very deserving: The worst part of her is in the sight, and that you know is not disagreeable; but did you see what a fine body she has, you would be ready to run mad for her: Surely she has the finest leg and foot that ever woman went on; and, for a skin, she may challenge the whole sex: In short, she is fit for a king's embraces. She has several good properties and one above all, which perhaps you'll say is the principal; she has money, and a great deal: Well, that will soon be disposed of, I dare say; I wish I knew on whom; Sure it must be some angel; for I have heard her find fault with very handsome men that have addressed to her: Pray, did you ever observe any man to come? He must be the person; for all her concerns are with women. Indeed, replied Quarll, I never take notice who comes:
Besides,

Besides, I am seldom at home ; so have not an opportunity to make observations. But I have, said she ; and made it my business to mind ; yet never saw any man in this house since I came, but you : Suppose you should be he at last ? O madam, there is no danger, answered Phil ; she, who has refused so many rich matches, will hardly set her mind on a poor singing-master. How do you know that ? replied the old lady : Love comes by fancy, and marriage by fate, and it may be yours to have her : So I would have you cultivate her love, which I could almost swear you possess ; you will find it worth your while : Here is an agreeable woman in an extraordinary good business, a house well furnished, and I'll warrant money-bags well filled : Now, if you are disposed to make your fortune, here is a fair opportunity. Quarll, was sadly puzzled what answer to make. His present circumstance prompts him to choose what his present condition obliges him to deny : His business slackens, and his charges no-wise lessen : His income is dubious, and expences certain ; the most prevailing arguments to embrace the offer : But then a strong obstacle starts up ; a wife : But she is out of the way, and as good as dead, whilst her living is paid for, which this proposed marriage will enable him to do, though other business failed. That objection being removed, his answer was, He feared that happiness would be above his aspiring to ; which, being according to the mediatrix's wish, she promised him her assistance. So he took his leave, and went about his daily affairs, leaving the management of that to her ; who immediately went to inform the amorous landlady of her success.

Quarll being returned at night, the old lady, pursuant to the business she had taken in hand, follows him to his chamber, with the joyful news, that she had, by her landlady's blushing, discovered what her modesty would have concealed ; that he was the man beloved ; and, therefore, she would not have him delay his being made happy : To which he answered, As she had been the first cause of his happiness, he left the accomplishment thereof to her direction. Well, then, said she, if I have the ordering of it, it shall be done the next Sunday, as being, of all the week, the most blessed day : And so bid him good night.

The old gentlewoman, being made sole directress of that

that affair, was very diligent in the accomplishment thereof; so had them married on the day she had proposed. The business was done privately, but the joy it produced could not be concealed: Every body read bride in the new married wife's face, so that greetings daily filled the house; which for a month, was a residence for mirth; and, during the space of a year, the seat of happiness; peace kept the door, and plenty attended them. But churlish fate, which ever persecuted him, would not permit that happy state to continue; and, the more to aggravate his loss, makes love, the chief author of his bliss, now the principal instrument of his sorrow: Jealousy, the greatest plague that can befall a married life, infects his wife. She is upon thorns whilst he is absent, and uneasy when present, with the fears of what he has done abroad: A discontented mind often urges the utterance of vexatious words, and breeds jarings, enemies to peace; which, being often disturbed, leaves her abode, which is immediately taken up by strife, and is commonly attended with ruin, the decreed influence of poor Quarll's surly fate. Business falling off from both their hands, makes them negligent of the little they have: The husband diverts his cares abroad, whilst the wife drinks away her sorrow at home. Thus money growing scant, credit must be pledged; which, being not redeemed, exposes the owner to disgrace, which is commonly the poor man's lot.

The mercer and silkman, with whom his wife dealt before she was married, having received money but once since her marriage, and seeing her discontent, imagined her husband (who appeared something too airy for one of her sedate years) was the occasion thereof, by his extravagant spending what she, with much care and frugality, had saved, arrested him, without giving him notice; lest, being warned, he should get away what she might have left, and then abscond.

Phil. who till then had kept secret his being in the guards, where he continued to screen himself from those debts his eloped wife might contract, is now obliged to let it be known, to keep himself out of goal.

His proud wife, who thought men of the best and genteelst trades inferior to her merits, seeing herself at last married to one, whose station was looked upon to be as odious as that of a common bailiff, fell in such a passion that

it cast her into a violent fit ; from which being recovered, she flies out of the house in a great fury, swearing by at all that was good, She would no more live with a foot soldier ; so left him in a sad confusion. Yet he stayed in the house, hoping she would, when cooler, consider of it, and be reconciled.

But great was his surprize, when next morning instead of his wife coming according to expectation, a judgment is served upon the goods of the house, at the suit of an upholsterer ; so the house being entirely unfurnished, he was obliged to seek new lodgings, where he continued a full quarter, without hearing of his wife.

Quarll, hoping his wife had left him in good earnest, indulges himself with the thoughts of being a third time delivered from the greatest incumbrance that can involve a man : wondering how he could so often fall into the same snare : Three wives, said he, in three years ? and every one equal plagues, though of a different nature ! The first a whore, of whom I was most luckily rid by accident : The second, a proud, lazy, indolent creature ; she by stratagem is secured : And the third a conceited jealous wretch ; to her ostentation I owe my deliverance. Well, now I am once more free, I'll take care how I hamper myself again : So makes a strong resolution let what would happen, to live single from that time ever after.

But his resolution, though ever so strong, cannot avert fate's irrevocable decree : A fourth wife is allotted him, which will bring upon him more vexation and trouble than he has yet gone through ; his peace will not only be broken, and his ease disturbed, but his life must be in jeopardy.

One evening that he was diverting his colonel, and the rest of his club, with singing at the tavern, as he usually did once a week, the landlady (who was then in company) much praised his voice and skill : the gentlemen took that opportunity to propose a match between Quarll, who went for a batchelor, and her, being a widow : all the company liked the proposal, and earnestly urged on the match.

Quarll, being a brisk, handsome, genteel young man, which qualifications have a vast ascendant upon the sex, especially on widows, made a considerable impression upon the hostess ; who, being already above forty, was willing to intermix her supernumerary years with those of an husband

band of a lesser age: So, turning to jest what she heartily wished to be in earnest, answers, in a joaking manner, that Mr. Quarll doubtless had, before that time, made a better choice; so would hardly agree to their proposal. A better choice! said the gentlemen, I deny that: here's a handsome jolly woman, a noble house well-accustomed, a cellar well stocked with good wine, and bags, doubtless well filled with money: I say he cannot make a better choice, nor shall he make any other; so here's to its good success: thus he drinks to her, who, in a joaking way puts it about. The glass having been round, now, Mr. Quarll, said the colonel, let us have a love-song to conclude the matter.

Phil. who thought the gentlemen had been but in jest, in his heart wished it could turn to earnest. The notion of a good establishment, and prospect of a considerable advantage, having blanced over these great obstacles his present low circumstances, and elevated condition, made him overlook, he did all he could to forward what had been proposed: so having, according to request, given the landlady a love song, he goes and salutes her with an hearty kiss; who, smiling, asked him, whether he thought she was to be purchased with a song? to which he replied, the song was only to express the thoughts of his heart, which he offered to purchase her love. Indeed, said she, in a pleasant manner, I do not know what your thoughts may be; but I never heard more agreeable expressions. Well then, widow, said these gentlemen, you cannot, in gratitude and good manners, but answer them kindly. Indeed, gentlemen, said she, I can say no more, but that they are mighty pretty words, and charmingly sung. Well then replied the colonel, I'll say the rest for you. The lover having expressed his passion in so soft terms, and engaging a way, you cannot without doing violence to your good nature, deny him what he requests in so melting a manner; nor shall; I say the word: Which was confirmed by all the company. To which she making no answer, it was taken for granted. So the marriage being concluded on, the next day was fixed upon for the performance thereof: being resolved not to adjourn till it was over, they bespoke a splendid supper, and so kept the night merrily.

The wedding was kept all the week, during which time every gentleman was profuse in his expences, for an en-

couragement to the new-married couple, whose trade increased daily.

Their prosperous beginning seemed to promise an happy life, living in love and peace at home, and being in good repute and credit abroad ; but the same fate which all along haunted poor Phil. is still at his heels : His bliss was but a blast. His eloped wife unfortunately happened to go by as he was going out : she had him immediately in her eye, which as speedily conveyed him to her heart : The addition which a charming new suit of clothes he then had on, made to his natural handsomeness, put out of her mind the cause of that disdain she had conceived for him ; and turns it into a more passionate love than ever ; she cannot live any longer from him ; she must have him with her at any rate, and will not rest till she finds out his lodgings ; from whence she resolves to wash all sorrow away with her tears, and settle him again in her arms. So she strait goes to the tavern she saw him come out of, supposing it might be a house he constantly used, on purpose to inquire where he lodged.

The new wife, who was then in the bar, to whom she applied, perceiving in her some sort of disorder, was very inquisitive to know her business ; in which the poor woman refusing to satisfy her, she told her that he lived there, and that she was his wife ; and therefore the fittest to know her concern. At these most dreadful words, she falls, like one thunder-struck, on the ground, deprived of all her senses ; and, for a considerable time, lies bereft of life.

This dull scene turns the new wife's passion into commiseration ; and she pities that misfortune which in her mind she before condemned as a crime. This, said she, is a true sign of love, which a harlot is not capable of : I cannot blame her for loving him, but rather condole her misfortune. So, having ordered fair water and hartshorn drops to be brought gave her some in a glass of water, which in a small time fetched her a little to life ; who, recovering, cried out, had I not been so bewitched as to go from him he would not have left me. These words in a moment turned the officious condoler into a revengeful rival, who immediately imagined she had lately lived with him as a mistress, and, doubtless would endeavour to do the same again : so, giving her hand (which she kindly held before) a scornful toss, why, you vile woman, said she, would you have him to live for ever in whoredom ?

dom? you judge me wrong madam said the afflicted woman; I am his lawful wife: so produces her certificate (which she happened to have about her :) which caused almost as much disorder in the beholder, as she herself was lately in.

She now began to ask her, in a violent passion, why she had been so base as to give him the opportunity to come and cheat her, by her leaving him; for she was his wife also? To which she answered, that she could not justify her going from him, though indeed she had great provocation, he not proving the man she took him to be. What! replied she in the bar, was he not man enough for you? I think you are very hard to please. However, since the deceit made you leave him, why do you disturb yourself about him? He has not deceived me? unless it be in having a wife before: But as you left him of your own accord, he had no more to do with you. No! replied she, in a passion; but he shall find, and so shall you, that I have to do with him: So went away.

It being then about noon, his usual time to come home from market, she went into a public-house opposite to the tavern, there to wait his return, which was a little after. As soon as she saw him, she gave him a call over.

The sudden and unexpected sight of the only obstacle to the happiness he then enjoyed, was most terrible shocking to him: He wished he had met with death to have missed her; but to no purpose: She had him in her eye, and was fully resolved to have him in her arms ere she went; and as he did not come as quick at her call as her impatience requires, she attempts to go over to him: but Phil. who knew her fiery temper was afraid she should break out into a passion in the street; which would have exposed him, and brought it to his new wife's knowledge, being near home: So hastens over to the house she was in, to prevent her coming: and, judging his beginning to upbraid her with her elopement would, in some measure, moderate her railing at him, tells her, as he enters the room, I hope, madam, you have, by this time, found a man, more to your mind. This was sufficient to provoke a milder temper to reproach him with his adulterous marriage, of which she was too certain; hers is but a fault, but his a crime: But as reproaches are not proper means to advance a reconciliation, which was her intent, she bridles her passion, and forces her nature to a submission; so throws herself at his feet, and falls a weeping;

she had committed a fault, for which she heartily repented, and promised to atone by her future behaviour ; calling heaven to witness her chastity during their most unhappy separation.

Phil. being of a compassionate temper, was soon made flexible by her tears : So takes her up by the hand, who as soon fell into his arms, uncapable of speaking for weeping ; but Phil. who was in haste to be gone, being waited for at home, it being about his time of dinner, complied with the poor afflicted woman's crying and sobbing, whose chief request was, that he would only see her home that time ; which he presently granted, to be quit of her : So ordered a coach to be called.

His new wife at home, being uneasy at his staying beyond his time, came to the door to look whether she could see him come. At that most unlucky time he was handing his other wife into the coach ; which she unfortunately spying, ran over, as swift as a hawk flies after his prey, and pulls him back by the lappet of his coat, as he was stepping into the coach after her : The disorder this second surprise put him in, obliged him to go again into the house he just came out of, where she immediately followed him, raving and railing as much as the provocation and her passion did allow, leaving in the coach his former wife ; who, by that second terrible surprize, was again struck speechless, and like one bereft of sense.

The coachman, having waited some time, being impatient, calls in the house, desiring the gentleman to make haste, or else allow him for waiting ; at which, the new wife comes out in a violent passion, and bids him be gone, for he was not wanted. What shall I do with the gentlewoman in my coach ? said he ; you had best take care of her ; she is not well ; or tell me where I shall carry her. Carry her to the devil, an you will, said she ; and so went in. You may carry her there, replied the surly coachman ; you best know the way : So goes to the coach and shakes her till she came to herself : Then, taking her up in her arms, I am bid to carry you to the devil, said he ; but I believe you are able to go yourself ; so I'll set you down here, that you may take your own time. Having set her down, he then drives away. There being a milliner's shop just by, she goes in, desiring leave to sit a while, 'till she was able to go. She had scarce been there three minutes, but she sees her husband handing his new wife

wife over, very complaisantly; which so exasperated her, that she fully resolved upon revenge; chusing he should be hanged, rather than her rival should enjoy him: So went directly, and took out a warrant, which she immediately served, and had him before a justice of the peace, who committed him forthwith to Newgate.

The following fissions happening to be extraordinary great, by the vast number of criminals, his trial, and several more, were put off 'till the next; so that he was confined at the time he used to send the money for his wife's board in the country: And not daring to employ any acquaintance in that affair, lest they should enquire into the occasion of his sending that money; he desired one, who often came to visit a prisoner, to do him that favour; which he readily promised, but did not perform: So that the people in the country, who were used to be paid a quarter beforehand, were a quarter in arrear: Which, with the boarder's pressing importunity to come up to London, made them at last resolve upon it; where being arrived, they immediately inquired after the unfortunate Quarll, whose imprisonment they soon heard of, as also of the cause thereof.

This did not a little exasperate the already sufficiently provoked inquisitress; who presently imagining, with good reason, that his confining her in the country was merely for that intent, resolved to prosecute him according to the utmost rigour of the law; wondering who that good person was that had him apprehended: So went and consulted her friends, who advised her not to let her husband know of her being in town till his trial came on; and then she should know the prosecutor, and at her own discretion, back the prosecution.

The mean time, his first wife, who had lately been dismissed (the knight who kept her being not long since married to a vast fortune) having heard of Phil's being in Newgate, went trait to visit him. Her grief and his surprize at her coming, stopped, for some time, the utterance of both their minds: At last Phil. who had a just reason to tax her as the author of his present misfortune, reproached her with her leaving him, which was the original cause thereof. The innocent, yet guilty Sally, whose inclination, disposition and resolution, had been violated, related the dismal account of her ravishment; and pleaded her cause with such a prevailing eloquence, as

new-kindled his former love, and made him (tho' the sufferer) give it on her side.

Being thoroughly reconciled, and having spent some hours in expressing both their griefs, they at last parted, after a thousand cordial embraces ; and as she was enabled, by the settlement the knight had made upon her, she supplied him with money and necessaries during his confinement in Newgate ; and was with him constantly every day, almost from morning till night ; and, when he was called upon his trial, she attended in the court, more concerned than if she herself had been arraigned.

The sessions being commenced, he was first called to the bar : His indictment being read, he desired to be heard by his counsel ; which was granted. The deponent having proved her marriage, required the prisoner at the bar should be obliged to live with her, or allow her a sufficient maintenance, as being his first wife ; at which she whom he kept in the country starts up : That belongs to me, said she ; I am the first wife : So produces her certificate. A third wife appearing, startles both the judges, and the prisoner, who thought her secure.

Sally, who till then had been silent, seeing the priority of marriage so much pleaded for, thought it might be worth her while to claim it, being her right, which she may chance to turn to the prisoner's advantage ; so addressing to the bench, My lords, said she, I did not think to apply for justice ; but, seeing these women contending for that which belongs to neither of them, I think myself obliged to claim my right : I am the first wife, and please your lordship. How ! a fourth wife, and indicted but for two ! said the judges, in a great surprize. Why, my lords, replied an old surly judge upon the bench, if truth be known, he has half a score ; I see it in his looks : These smock-faced young fellows are so admired by the women, that they have not power to refuse any thing. Sally, who thought to do the prisoner service, in taking the privilege of first wife into her own hands, finding the success of her good intent quite reversed heartily repented appearing, and would have withdrawn, but that the judges told her she was now become the prosecutrix, and was obliged to go on in the prosecution. This caused such a disorder in her, who imagined she should be the unfortunate occasion of his being cast, that she was ready to swoon. Phil's
counsel,

counsel, perceiving her disorder, imagined it might proceed from a regret of the mischief she had done; so put her in a way to invalidate her deposition: Now, madam, said the counsel, I very much question whether you can make your assertion good: Pray produce your certificate; you can do us no hurt else. Sally, overjoyed to hear that, said she had none; chusing to undergo the greatest disgrace, rather than he should come to the least hurt. I thought as much, said the counsel. Well, well, replied the surly judge, she may have lost it: Where was you married, child? At Chatham, my lord, I think, answered she, very much discountenanced. At Chatham, did you say? replied the counsel: I doubt yours has been a sailor's wedding, over a pot of drink; a man's wife till the next voyage, and any body's when he is gone. Your lordships see how the case stands. Yes, yes, answered a judge; if she is his first wife that way, I dare say he is not her first husband, by many. So she was hissed out of the court. Then the judge addressing to the next pretender, I hope, says he, yours will not prove a sailor's wedding, as her's did. A sailor's! No, my lord, replied the second wife; I have witnesses enough to mine: My lady Firebrass, with whom I lived, and her two daughters saw me fairly married in St. Martin's church. How came it, said the judge, you did not sue him before he married the third wife? You should have prevented his cheating any other poor woman. Why, my lord, said she, I knew nothing of it; he kept me a prisoner in the country, at this good woman's house, where he decoyed me under pretence of being careful of me: I must go into the country, for a month or two, to take the air! but when he had me there, there he kept me ever since, charging the people of the house not to suffer me to come up to London, nor yet to go out; pretending I was mad, because I complained I was not well. A very pretty device! replied the old judge. Yes, my lord, cried out all the women in the court (who were come in great numbers to hear a trial about a rape committed by a quaker upon a maid of fifty years of age) and a very bad precedent, if not severely punished: Should this be suffered, a poor wife will not dare to be out of order, or complain, in hopes to be made much of, for fear her husband, under colour of giving her the pleasure of the country air, shall,
when

when he has got her there, confine her, and so marry whom he pleases at London.

The judges, to quell their clamour, were obliged to call to them, and promise them it should be no precedent; and that they might be sick at will, and groan at their pleasure, and also accept of their husband's kindness when offered.

The court being silenced, the proceedings went on: And several of the judges having been spoken to by some of Phil's particular friends, who were related to some of them, they were more favourable in their judgment, all but the old surly judge, with whom no interest had been made.

The three wives then present having proved their marriage, the prisoner at the bar was asked, What he had to say in his own defence?

Phil. who thought his wife in the country was secure from coming against him, not having given his counsel instructions concerning her, was obliged to plead himself: My lords, said he, the first deponent against me being run mad, and therefore unfit for human society, I was obliged to think of some retirement for her, as 'tis necessary for people in her case. Unfit for human society! replied the second wife, in a great fury; and was going on in the same temper, but was bid to be silent, and he to proceed: So, my lords, said he, I proposed the country, as the most pleasant and wholesome place, as also that which suited her indisposition best, being always ambitious to imitate the quality, who commonly go into the country in the summer; which made her accept the offer. There, my lords, I boarded her with very honest and sufficient people, in a handsome, creditable and pleasant house: A pleasant house! replied she; a perfect hovel. There, my lords, I provided her every thing she could want or desire, as her landlady, here present, can testify. His counsel, who, by what he had said, had taken sufficient hints to proceed, took the plea out of his hand, and went on: Ant please your lordship, said he, since by her madness—My madness! said she, interrupting the counsel; I desire, my lords, this good woman (with whom I have lived many years) may be sworn, whether she in all that time, did see or discern the least symptoms of madness in me. Indeed, replied the old woman, I have often seen you in the vapours; but I cannot say I ever saw you, what they say,
raving

raving mad, but once. My lord, said the prisoner, I beg this letter, which she sent me a week after she was there, may be read ; and then your lordships may judge, whether I do her wrong.

Orders being given from the bench, the letter was read: The old woman hearing her house so despised, " where a " well-bred dog would run mad, if kept in ;" and then her husband and herself compared to oxen and cows, was not a little displeased : My house, Madam, said the old woman, is not so despicable neither, as that comes to : I'm sure there's hardly a better, or more convenient within ten miles round it. As for the room you lay in, no gentlewoman, in her right senses, but would be contented especially in the country ; I must be obliged to side with your husband there : And for my husband and me to be reckoned no better than brutes, you have little reason to say so : for no woman can be used with more humanity than you have been : and as for your being confined, you never were shut up any where, but always had the liberty of walking about our ground ; only indeed I would not consent you should trudge to London, as you did often offer to do. The old woman having done speaking, Quarll's counsel put it to the bench, whether the prosecutrix ought to be accounted in her right senses. The judges having given their opinion that she was frantic ; the old judge being displeased at their answer, asked them, whether a man or woman's being frantic (which but few in this town are more or less) do impower either to marry again ; and if they will not allow that, why he did marry a third ; The second is not mad. The second, replied the counsel, eloped, my lord, and was from her husband half a year ; and 'tis to be questioned, whether she would ever have come near him, had she not accidentally found this opportunity to trouble him. 'Tis a plain case, my lord, said another judge, the prisoner is guilty of the crimes he stands indicted for : Yet I don't see but that there is room for favour. His constitution may perhaps require a woman for the maintenance of his health, and his inclination is averse against vile women : Besides, my lord, we don't hear that he did cohabit or correspond with more than one at a time ; and never sought a supply till he was destitute. In my opinion, my lord, he may be favoured a little. The ill-natured judge told them very surlily, that the fact was plain, and that he was tried according

according to the laws of his country ; and must expect to suffer the penalty of those laws : But he could see no room for favour, unless his majesty (Charles the Second) would graciously be pleased to shew it him ; and it was intirely out of his own power : So sums up the evidences, and refers it the jury.

The jury went out accordingly : and, after having stay'd some time, brought in their verdict, death. Sally, who was just by, no sooner heard the terrible news, but fainted away, and was obliged to be carried out of court : The three wives likewise went away, upbraiding and reproaching one another with being the fatal cause of losing their husband, wishing one another never to be relieved by man ; and so parted : But Sally, as soon as recovered, went back to the prisoner again, and staid with him till the court broke up ; and then was allowed a coach to carry him to Newgate, and attended him there all that night.

As soon as the keepers came in the morning, he calls for pen, ink, and paper, which was brought him ; and wrote the following letter to his colonel :

May it please your honour,

I AM now under the terrible sentence of condemnation ; I need not tell you upon what account, my case being too well known to the world already : but as you have bestowed so many particular favours upon me hitherto this emboldens me once more, in this my extreme necessity, to rely upon your goodness. 'Tis true my merit cannot lay claim to the least mark of your esteem ; but 'tis your generosity prompts me to beg my life at your hands, which if you preserve, shall always be devoted to your service, by

Your unfortunate,

Humble servant,

PHILIP QUARLL.

As

As soon as he had finished, he delivers it to his dear-beloved Sally, and desires her to carry the same to his colonel : Sally, joyful to serve him, takes the letter, and away she flies. Being come to the house, she delivers the letter to the colonel ; who, having opened and read it, told her, that she might assure him, he would do all that lay in his power to serve him : So Sally, expressing her gratitude, retired to carry the news to her husband : When she came to the prison she found him reading very seriously, leaning upon his hand, with tears in his eyes ; she stood some time to look at him ; but finding he never stirred his head, nor moved his eyes, she went softly up to him, and spoke to him ; he no sooner heard her voice, but he starts, and looks like one just awoke from a dream ; and then burst into tears, Sally could not forbear weeping ; and fell upon his neck, desiring him with all tenderness to stop the torrent ; for she had some joyful news to tell him. What joyful news, says he, can you bring a man under my wretched circumstances ? Can any thing elevate the mind whom heaven itself has contrived to depress ? Am not I the very out-cast and scorn of Providence ? Have not I been unfortunate from my infancy ? And why will you still add to my misery ; 'tis you that now make me wretched ; had you not so compassionately assisted me in this my dismal calamity with so much tenderness, I then willingly should have left this hateful world, without thinking of you ; but why must I make you the wretched partner of my misfortunes ? 'Tis that adds to my uneasiness. O that I had not seen you in these my last moments ! Sally, interrupting him, said, come talk not of last moments ; you yet may enjoy many happy years ; your colonel has promised to use his utmost endeavours to preserve your life. I don't flatter myself with any thing of that kind, says he, but if such a thing should happen, I am fully resolved not to tarry long in England, which has brought upon me so many dire mishaps.

The colonel was as good as his word ; for he loved Quarll extremely well ; and therefore, as soon as Sally was gone, he orders his coach to be got ready, and away he goes to my lord Danby, who had a great influence at court at that time, and was his particular friend. When he came thither, his lordship was not stirring ; so he waited till he got up ; who, as soon as come down, cries out, so colonel, what brings you here so soon ? Did you come to

L

breakfast

breakfast with me? The colonel seeing him so facetious and pleasant, told him his message. My lord, as soon as he heard it, answered, that upon his honour, he certainly would grant his request; and made him stay to breakfast with him.

As soon as breakfast was over, he took his leave of his lordship, and away he comes to bring the tidings to Phil. whom he found alone, Sally having just left him. The colonel told him, he was sorry to see him there, with other compliments usual in such cases; and related to him the success he had with my lord Danby; so desired him to be of good cheer. Quarll fell at his feet, and expressed his gratitude in the most thankful terms imaginable; telling him, his life should always be at his service. His colonel, raising him up, told him, he was very well satisfied; and, after a little more conversation, left him.

Sally, in the mean time, was not idle; for she went and bought a rich piece of plate, and presented it to the recorder, that he might favour Phil. in his report to his majesty; which had the desired effect; for, when the dead warrant came down, he was excluded; and in a few days after, my lord Danby procured his majesty's most gracious pardon; which his colonel brought him with great joy.

Phil. being discharged out of Newgate, resolved not to tarry long in England; and told his beloved Sally, that he must now leave her, for he had made a vow not to tarry in Britain. She endeavoured to dissuade him from his intentions; but finding it to no purpose, desired she might accompany him. He asked her, why she desired to be wretched, telling her, he was doomed to perpetual misery: But she was resolutely bent to follow him where ever he went; and accordingly sold what the Knight had settled upon her, in order to carry the money with her.

Phil. hearing of a ship bound for the South Seas, which in her return was to touch at Barbadoes, the captain of her having been first mate of the ship to which he had formerly belonged, was by this encouraged to venture the voyage. Accordingly, he went to the commander, in order to agree with him about it. The captain, after some talk began to call to mind their former acquaintance, but wondered to see him so much altered as to his condition; Quarll being very handsomely dressed, and his behaviour much better polished than formerly; so desired him to give him

him an account how this strange alteration had happened, and by what means he came to this good fortune. Good fortune! do you call it? says Quarll; I suppose then you look upon men by their outward appearance: But, did you know the world as well as I do, you would judge the contrary. Now, adds he, I'll give you a short account of my past life; and then I'll leave you to say whether I am not rather the perfect scorn and mock of fortune: So related to him his past misfortunes in so moving a manner, that it almost drew tears from the captain's eyes. As soon as had made an end, well, says the captain, I thought that my way of living brought upon me more troubles than land-men are subject to! for, since I saw you, I have been ship-wrecked twice; once upon the coast of Guinea, where I lost the ship and cargo, and but five men saved; the other time, homeward bound from the East-Indies, a violent storm arose, and drove us upon the coast of France, where, with great difficulty we cast anchor, in order to refit our ship, which was very much damaged in the late storm: But about twelve o'clock the same night we came thither, a most violent hurricane blew in upon us, broke our cables and drove us ashore; where again I lost the ship and cargo, but all the men saved: Thus I think I have been unfortunate; but since they are past, never think of them: We shall have a pleasant voyage; and as you say you have a mind to reside at Barbadoes, where I must touch in my return, I'd have you lay out your money in the woollen manufacture, and cutlery-ware, which are very good commodities in those parts. Quarll thanked him for his advice, and parted with him.

Away then he goes to Sally, and told her what he had been doing, and whither he intended to go. Sally answered, what was his pleasure should be hers; and that she would be a partner in his fortunes and misfortunes, go whither he would. So Quarll went and bought the goods which the captain advised him to, and sent on board; and soon after followed with himself and wife.

They had not been long at sea, before his darling Sally fell sick and died, to his inexpressible grief; wishing ten thousand times he had died with her. He began to be extreme melancholy, took no rest, and would eat no victuals. The captain was afraid that he would die also;

and did all he could to divert him; but was a long time before he could bring him to his former temper.

They sailed on with a side-wind for the space of a month; though, it changing full in their teeth, and very high withal, obliged them to cast anchor, in order to lie by till the wind did serve; but seeing themselves made upon by a pirate, they were obliged to weigh their anchor, and make the best of their way before the wind, in order to avoid being taken by those infidels, who pursued them from four of the clock on Friday morning, till ten at night the following Sunday; at which time there arose a storm; the sky looked very black, the wind being at north-west, and clouds began to rise and move towards them, having hung all the morning in the horizon: So that they took in their top sails, and furled their main-sail; the sea ran very short, and broke in upon their deck; however, they put right before the wind, and sailed so for three weeks, when they made Cape Horne: They had no sooner got round the cape, but the wind veered to the south, and it fell a flat calm; which continued for two days, when the wind sprung up at south-west, and they scudded before the wind very swift, and made an island whose name none of them knew, the ship having never been on the coast before; but there they found wood, water, and herbs of several sorts, some seals and sea fowls. Here they refreshed themselves for four days; and then weighed anchor, the wind being fair at full south, and traded at several ports on the coast of Peru, Chili, and Mexico. From Port Aquapulco they sailed, having a fresh breeze, at N. N. E. They had not sailed above one day, before the wind veered to S. W. and blew a violent gale of wind; and there being a great sea, so that their ship took in a great deal of water, the wind continuing two days increasing to a very great storm, which held for one day and two nights more; during which time they perceived themselves near some rocks. The storm rather increasing, and it growing dark, they despaired of saving the ship; and as the main yard could not lower, the ship's tackling being disordered by the violence of the storm; Quarll, being bold and active, took a hatchet which tumbled about the deck, and ran up the shrouds, in order to cut down what stopt the working of the main-yard; but, by that time he was got up, there came a sea which dashed the ship to shatters against the rock; and with the violence

lence of the shock, flung Phil. who was astride upon the main-yard on the top of the rock; where, having the good fortune to fall in a cleft, he was hindered from being washed back again into the sea, and drowned, as every body were that belonged to the ship.

Phil. remained the succeeding night in the cleft in a dismal condition, being continually beaten with the dashing back of the sea, and being both bruised and numbed pulled of his clothes which were dropping wet, and spread them in the sun; and being over-fatigued, lays himself down on the smoothest place of the rock he could find, being quite spent with the hardship he had undergone, and slept while his clothes were drying.

His sleep though very profound, was not refreshing: The danger he had been lately in, so ran in his mind, that grim death was ever before his eyes; which constantly disturbed his rest: But nature who wanted repose, would be supplied, though it be broken. Having slept a few hours, he awakes almost as much fatigued as before, and faint for want of nourishment, having taken none for thirty-six hours before: So having looked upon his clothes, which he perceived were not quite dry, he turned the other side to the sun and laid himself down to sleep again; but still nothing but horror entered his mind: His soul was continually harrassed with the dismal apprehensions the effects of the late storm had impressed upon him. He dreamt he was in a terrible tempest, and the ship he was in dashed backwards and forwards through the waves with prodigious violence, the clouds pouring down vast streams of liquid fire, and the raging ocean all in flames. In this dismal condition he knew not what to do; but spying some land, as he thought, at a little distance from the ship, he was endeavouring to get thither; but not daring to trust the sea, which he imagined was like a caldron of oil in a blaze, resolved to try whether he could not jump ashore: But just as he was going to leap, he saw a horrid frightful monster, with glaring eyes, and open mouth, rush from the boiling flame, and make at him to devour him; which scared him out of his sleep.

When he awoke, he was very much terrified with his dream, and stared about him in a frightened manner, expecting every minute some creature to devour him: But, taking a little courage, put on his clothes, which by this time were quite dry. He then looks about him; but alas

could see nothing but the dreadful effects of the late tempest, dead corpses, broken planks, and battered chests floating, and such aspects which at once filled him with terror and grief.

Turning from those shocking objects, which presented to his eyes the dreadful death he had so lately escaped, he sees at the other side the prospect of one more terrible, hunger and thirst, attended with all the miseries that can make life burdensome. Being seized with the terror of the threatening evil, he turns again towards the sea, and looking on the dead corpses, which the sea now-and-then drove to the rock, and back again, Oh! that I was like one of you, said he, past all dangers! I have shared with you in the terrors of death: Why did not I also partake with you in its relief? But why should I complain? and have so much reason to be thankful! Had I been cut off, when the cares of saving this worthless carcase intercepted me from seeking the salvation of my soul, I should not have had the present opportunity of taking care of it. So, having returned thanks for his late deliverance, he resigns himself to Providence, on whom he fully relies; climbs up the rock, and being come to the top, sees land at the inside, bearing both trees and grass: Heaven be praised! said he; I shall not perish upon these barren rocks: So made a shift to go down to it, the weather then being calm.





T H E
E N G L I S H H E R M I T.

B O O K I I I.

*An ACCOUNT of QUARLL's wonderful shifts,
and surprising manner of living ; of the miracu-
lous acts of Providence, and of the strange e-
vents which happened in the island since his
being there.*



BEING come to the other side of the rock, he finds at the bottom of it a narrow lake, which separated it from the land: Therefore pulling off his clothes, the water being but shallow, he wades over with them in his arms; and dressing himself, walks up a considerable way in the island, without seeing any human creature, or perceiving any sign of its being inhabited, which struck a great damp to his spirits. He walks it over and over, cross-ways and long-ways; yet could see nothing but monkeys, strange beasts, birds, and fowls, such as he had never seen before.

Having ranged himself weary he sat down under a cluster of trees, that made an agreeable arbour: The place being pleasant and cool, made, as it were for repose, and he being still very much fatigued, prompted him to lie down,
and

and sleep; during which, his mind is continually alarmed with the frightful aspect of grim death: Sometimes he fancies himself striving with the rolling waves, stretching out his arms to catch hold of a plank passing by: which, just come at, is beaten back by the roaring billows, whose terrible noise pronounces his death; at other times, he thinks himself astride upon a piece of mast, labouring to keep himself on, and of a sudden washed away, and sunk down by a bulky wave; on every side of him men calling for help; others spent and past speaking; here some floating that are already perished, and there others expiring; thus in every object seeing his approaching fate.

Being awaked out of that irksome and uneasy sleep, he falls into as anxious and melancholy thoughts. I have, said he, escaped being drowned, but how shall I avoid starving? Here's no food for man. But why should I despair? Did not Nebuchadnezzar live upon grass for several years, till restored to his nation? Cannot I do the same for a few days? by which time, Providence, who has hitherto protected me, may raise me some means to get from hence. So, being entirely resigned, he walks about to see the island, which he found surrounded with rocks, at the bottom of which there was a small lake, which was fordable in most places, so that he could with ease wade over to the rock; which he did at every side of the island, to see if he could perceive any ship, whereby he might get away: But, seeing none, and it drawing towards night, he returns and employs the remainder of the day in looking for the most convenient place for him to pass away the approaching night; and, having fixed upon one of the highest trees, he gets up as far as he well could, fearing some wild beast might devour him if he slept below; where having returned thanks to heaven for his late great deliverance, he commits himself to its care; then settles, and falls to sleep, and slept till hunger waked him in the morning, having dream't over night of abundance of victuals, which he would fain have come at, but was kept off by a cross cook, who bid him go and fish for some: To which he answered, that he was shipwrecked; and had nothing to fish withal. Well then, said the cook to him again, go where thou wast like to lose thy life, and there thou shalt find wherewithal to support it.

Being

Being awaked he makes reflections upon his dream, which though he imagined it might proceed from the emptiness of his stomach, being customary for people to dream of victuals, when they go to bed hungry, yet at that time it may prove ominous: So driven by necessity, and led by curiosity, he went to the same side of the rock he had been cast upon; where having stood several hours without seeing shipping, or aught that might answer his dream; the air coming from the sea being pretty sharp, and he faint, having taken no manner of food for near three days, he gave over all hopes of relief. Thus submitting himself to the will of heaven, which he supposed decreed a lingering death to punish him for his past sins, he resolves to return where he lay the night before, and there wait for his doom: but being stopped by a sudden noise which issued from a creek in the rock, not far from where he stood, he had the curiosity to go and see what occasioned it.

Being come to the place he heard the noise proceed from, he sees a fine large cod fish near six feet long, dabbling in a hole in the rock, where the late storm had cast it.

One under condemnation of death, and just arrived at the place of execution could not be more rejoiced at the coming of a reprieve, than he was at the sight of this fish, having felt several sick qualms, forerunners of the death he thought he was doomed to. Heaven be praised! said he; here's my dream right: where Providence rescued my life from the grim jaws of death, there it has provided me wherewithal to support it.

So having taken off both his garters, he gets into the hole where the fish lay; and having run them through its gills, he hales it out, and drags it after him, being heavy, and he very weak. Going along, he finds several oysters, mussels, and cockles, in his way, which the sea had cast up and down the rock; and having a knife about him, he sat down and eat a few; so refreshed himself, his spirits being exhausted for want of food. This small nutriment very much recruited his decayed strength; and the thoughts of this supply of provision having dispersed the dull ideas his late want had bred in his mind, he cheerfully takes his fish, which he drags with much more vigour than before; and filling his pockets with salt that was congealed by the sun, which he found in
the

the concavities of the rock, away he goes to the place, where he lay the night before, in order to dress some of the cod fish; where being come, he picks up a parcel of dry leaves, and with his knife, and a flint, struck fire and kindled them: Then getting together a few sticks, made a fire presently, and broiled a slice of his fish: of which he eat so heartily that it overcame his stomach, being grown weak with fasting: Thus sick, and out of order, he applies to the helpless recourse, which was lying down; and having much fatigued and harrassed himself with haling the fish up and down the rock, he fell asleep till the next morning; during which time his rest was very much disturbed with the frightful dream of being attacked by a terrible monster, such as never was heard of either for bigness or grimness: which pursued him, till having run himself out of breath, he was forced to lie exposed to his fury; but was prevented being devoured by a grave old gentlewoman of a most graceful and majestic countenance, at whose sudden appearance the monster fled. Having recovered breath, and strength to speak, he returns the old lady thanks for his deliverance, and begs leave to wait on her home, that he might know whither to come and pay his constant duty to her for this her late great kindness: To which she answered, that she was fixed in no particular habitation, but dwelt at every poor man's house; her occupation being to assist the helpless, but not the slothful and negligent: That he should see her again before it was long. Mean time, she bid him not go on in evil ways, but whenever overtaken, not to despair; for she was always at hand: Nevertheless, she would not have him too depending. And so went away, leaving him very easy and pleased in his mind, that he had escaped such vast danger.

Having slept quietly the remainder of the night, he awoke in the morning pretty fresh and hearty, but very much disturbed at his late dream, which he feared presaged and prognosticated some approaching evil; but as he could make no comparative allusion of the old lady, who rescued him from the monster, he concludes it must be an inspiration of Providence (whom the grave old lady did personate in the dream) who lately had preserved him from a death by all appearance unavoidable, to keep him from despair in this his great extremity, promising to be at hand upon occasion; yet would not have him neglect means.

means to get away from a place where want threatens him. For tho' he might for a while subsist upon fish, wherewith he may be supplied, being surrounded by the sea; yet he could not imagine which way he could be furnished with clothes and bed against the winter; for want of which he must miserably perish with cold, unless supplied by some such dismal accident as exposed him to the want thereof, which he heartily wishes and prays may never happen.

Having made these considerations, he, on his knees, returns kind Providence his hearty thanks for all his mercies that had been extended to him; begging the continuance of its assistance. Then, as he took directions from his dream, watching the opportunity of getting away from that melancholy place, he goes to the other side of the rock, to try if he could perceive any shipping in sight.

The wind being pretty high, fed his hopes, that each succeeding hour would gratify his wishing look, with that object the preceding could not bring forth; but was disappointed. The night approaching, kept back all probability for that time; however, depending on better success the next day, he returns whence he came, and being hungry, makes a fire, and broils another slice of the fish, then lays the rest upon broad green leaves, and strews salt thereon to keep it from spoiling, then goes to rest; and as he lay undisturbed the night before under the trees, and much more easy than a top, he ventured again committing himself to the care of Providence.

But his thoughts, which all day had been disturbed with the dread of those hardships he must probably undergo, if obliged to continue there all winter, so ran in his mind, that they occasioned ideas suitable to those he had formed the day before; and cold being the greatest of his fears, it, is also the principal subject of his dream; which presented to his imagination, that he was in a spacious place, paved with hailstones of a prodigious bigness, and surrounded with high mountains of ice, which echoed with shivers: At the farther end thereof he saw an old man resembling Time, as he is commonly painted, with heaps of snow and hail about him, and himself very busy with making more: At his side stood a very beautiful woman, whose shape and make was uncommon, and her features and complexion extraordinary; but what sur-
prized

prized him most, was her having three pair of breasts, wonderfully handsome, and curiously placed, which seemed to adorn her bosom far more than the richest stomacher made of diamonds or pearls could do: so that what in other woman would look monstrous, was in her an addition to her matchless beauty.

The sight of that most perfect and complete woman warmed his blood, which the coldness of the place had chilled, and tempted him to come nearer the charmer. As he advanced, every step he made, seemed to add strength to his limbs, and vigour to his life; which made him desirous to come nearer to the person from whom he received such beneficial effluvia; but was suddenly stopped by the old man's turning towards him with a grim and furlly countenance, which threatened his nearer approach with evil.

Not daring to come nearer, he stands still, wondering what business that most charming creature could have with that surly morose old fellow; when listening a while, he perceived she was asking boons of him in the behalf of a vast number of all sorts of creatures that attended her at some distance behind, which he refused in a most churlish manner; and as she still persisted in her suit, following him up and down, the ill-natured old man flily steps to the frosty mountain, and pulls down a large clod of ice, which stopped a gap therein, from whence came out a creature, made and featured like a man, but of a monstrous size and frightful aspect; his excessive broad cheeks hanging down on each side of his long piked chin, like two empty bladders; and his preposterous belly hung down looking just like a sail without wind. That monster was no sooner out, but he had orders from the spiteful old man to drive away the woman and all her attendants; which word of command was no sooner given, but it was put in execution. Having filled his thrivelled jaws with wind, which then stood out like to many kettle-drums, he falls a blowing upon one of the hills of snow, and turns it into a thick shower, which he drove with violence against that angel like creature, and her clients, who immediately fled for shelter.

This barbarous treatment to the most deserving of creatures put him in amaze; to whom the angry old man (seeing he did not go with the rest) came in a fury, saying, dost thou put me to defiance? I'll bury thee in that
which

which I only strewed over them, and went to lay hold of him; which caused him to awake in a wonderful fright.

Being risen, he made reflections upon the late dreams: All my dreams, said he, have ever proved ominous; and, if I mistake not, this must have some signification; certainly this old man is time, laying up store of frost and snow against next winter; and that goodly woman is nature, who being tender over all her creatures, interceded for moderation: And his surly refusal, and rough usage, prognosticate a forward and hard winter, to whose severity I must lie exposed, being altogether unprovided.

These reflections bred various melancholy thoughts, which almost led him to despair. Oh! said he, that I was but a mouse, bat, or yet a meaner creature! Then should I be below the cruel persecutions of fate. But man, who was created in the noblest form, endued with reason and understanding, animated with an immortal soul, must be aimed at as the only mark worthy its malignant darts! But why do I thus rave at those evils we are the authors of? Had man continued in his original state of innocence, the very name of fate or fortune would not have been known. Well, since this is the product of sin, I accept this black lot as justly coming to my share; and humbly submitting to heaven's decree, I thankfully take this dream as a timely warning; and, in imitation of those creatures represented in it, I'll provide what shelter I can against bad weather comes.

Accordingly, first he begins to think of making himself an house to preserve him from the injuries of the weather; but having nothing to make it of, nor any instrument but a knife, which could be of little service to him, he resolves to go to that part of the rock where he was shipwrecked, to see if he could discover any thing among the wreck that might be serviceable to him; and therefore takes a branch of a tree along with him, and, coming to the place, he strips himself, and goes into the water (the water being low, discovering the tops of several sharp pointed rocks) and gropes along with his staff for sure footing, wading as high as his chin, diving to the bottom frequently, and feeling about with his hands. This he continued doing for almost two hours, but to no purpose, not daring to go out of his depth; for he well knew, that

he could do little good there, because he could discover no part of the ship, not so much as the mast or any of the rigging, but fancied she lay in some deep hole, where it was impossible to get at her.

Thus despairing, and fretting and teizing himself, he calls to mind that he had a hatchet in his hand when he was cast away, and thought probably it might lie in that cleft of the rock into which he was thrown; thither he went, and, looking about, perceived something like the handle of a hatchet just above the surface of the water at the bottom of the rock; and, going down to it, took it up; which to his great joy, proved to be the very thing he wanted.

Having got his tool, he dresses himself, and goes on to the island again, intending to cut down some trees to make himself a hut: Looking about, therefore, for the properest plants, and taking notice of a sort of trees, whose branches, bending to the ground, took root, and became a plant, he thought that they might be the fittest for this purpose, and cut a sufficient parcel of them to make his barrack; which was full business for him that day.

The next morning, having paid his usual devotion, he walks out again to look for a pleasant and convenient place to make his hut or barrack upon: He walked several hours, and could find none more sheltered from the cold winds, than that where he already lay, being in the middle of the island, well fenced on the north and east sides with trees, which stood very thick: The place being fixed upon, he hews down some trees that grew in his way, and clears a spot of ground about twelve feet square leaving one tree standing at each corner; and, with the young plants he provided the day before, filled the distance between quite round, setting them about six inches asunder, leaving a large vacancy for the door: His inclosure being made, he bends the branches a-top from both sides, and weaves them cross one another, making a cover to it; which being something too thin, he laid other branches over, till they were grown thicker: Having finished the top, he goes about closing the sides; for which purpose, taking large branches, he strips off their small twigs, and weaves them between the plants as they do for sheep-pens; then made a door after the same manner.

His

His barrack being finished, which took him up fifteen days hard work ; now, said he, here's a house, but where is the furniture ? This, indeed, may keep the weather from me, but not the cold. The ground on which I do and must lie, is hard, and doubtless, in the winter, will grow damp, which, with want of covering, may occasion agues and fevers, the cholick and rheumatism, and twenty racking distempers, which may cause me to repent my having escaped a milder death.

In this great consternation and perplexity, he goes to see if he could spy any shipping riding within sight of the island : As he was walking along, full of heavy and dull thoughts, which weighed his looks to the ground, he happened to find a sort of high grass but here-and-there, round some particular sort of trees, of which he never took notice before. Heaven be praised ! said he, I have found wherewithal to keep my poor body from the ground, whilst I am, by Providence, doomed to remain here : So passes on, intending at his return, to cut down a sufficient quantity of it to make mats that might serve him instead of bed and bed clothes.

Having looked himself almost blind, without seeing the least prospect of what he desired, he concludes upon going to cut the grass which he stood in such want of, and spread it to dry, whilst the weather was yet warm : That piece of work kept him employed the remainder of the day, and best part of the succeeding, having nothing but a pocket knife to cut withal. That work being done, wanting a tool to spread and turn his grass, he takes a branch off the next tree, which having stript of all the small ones about it, all but that part at the top, being forky made a tolerable fork : Thus being equipped for hay-making, he went on with his work ; and as he was at it, he saw, at some distance, several monkeys as busy as himself, scratching something out of the ground, which they did eat upon the spot, and carried the rest to their home.

His hopes that those roots might be for his use, those creatures being naturally dainty, eating nothing but what men may, made him hasten to the place he saw them scratching at, that by the herb they bear (which they tore off) he might find out the root.

Having by the leaves which he picked off the ground, found some of the same, he digs them up, and carried them to his barrack, where he broiled a slice of his fish,

and in the ashes roasted them, which eat something like chefnuts done in the same manner.

This new-found-out eatable much rejoicing him, he returned his hearty thanks to kind Providence, that he had put him in a way to provide himself with bread, and that of a most delicious kind. As soon therefore as he had dined, he went out on purpose to dig up a good quantity; but, as he was going to the place where he had taken notice they grew pretty thick, he sees a tortoise of about a foot over, crawling before him: Heaven be praised! said he, here's what will supply me both with victuals, and utensils to dress it in: He ran therefore, and turned it on its back, to keep it from getting away, whilst he went for his hatchet, that he might cut the bottom shell from the top, in order to make a kettle of the deepest, and a dish of the flat part.

Being tired of cod fish, he dresses the tortoise, an animal seldom eaten but upon extremity, the flesh thereof often giving the flux: Nevertheless he ventured upon it, and liked it extremely, some part of it eating very much like veal; which at that time was a very great novelty to him having taken no fresh meat for a long time before.

Happening to eat of that part of the tortoise which is the most feeding and less hurtful, he was in no-wise discomposed; but having boiled it all, he laid by the remainder to eat now and then between his fish.

Being provided with a boiling utensil, he often had change, by means of those admirable roots so luckily discovered; some of which he roasted for bread, others he boiled with salt-cod: This in a great measure mitigated his misfortune, and softened the hardship he lay under; so that seeing but little prospect of changing his present condition, by getting away from thence yet-a-while, he thinks on means to make it as easy as possibly whilst he remained in it; for having projected a bed, and taken the grass, which by that time was dry, he falls to work; and a mat being the thing concluded upon, he twists his hay into ropes, the bigness of his leg; then he cuts a pretty number of sticks, about two feet long, which he drives in the ground, ten in a row, and near four inches asunder, and opposite to them such another row at six or seven feet distance from the first, which made the length of his mat; then having fastened one end of his rope to one of the corner sticks, he brings it round the other corner

ner

ner stick, and so to the next at the other end, till he has laid his frame : Then he weaves across shorter ropes of the same in the manner they make pallions on board with old cable ends. When he had finished his mat, he beat it with a long stick, which made it swell up ; and the grass being of a soft cottony nature, he had a warm and easy bed to lie on.

The comfort and pleasure he found on his soft mat (being grown sore with lying on the ground for the space of a month and more) so liberally gratified him for the time and labour he had bestowed in making it, that it gave him encouragement to go about another ; a covering being the next necessary wanted ; for though the winter was, as yet, pretty warm, and he, in a great measure, seasoned by the hardship he had gone through ; yet the winter approaching, and the present season still favourable for him to make provision against it, he goes and cuts more grass ; which being made ready for use, he lengthens his loom, to allow for rolling up at one end, instead of a bolster, and makes it thicker than the first, which he intends, in cold weather, shall lie on him instead of blankets.

Being provided with the most necessary furniture he wanted, he thinks on more conveniences, resolving to make a table to eat his victuals upon, and a chair to sit on : Thus, having cut several sticks about four feet long, he drives them in a row a little way in the ground ; then takes smaller, which he interweaves between : Having made the top, he sets it upon four other sticks, forked at the upper end, which he stuck in the ground at one side of his barrack, to the height of a table ; this being done, he cuts four more branches, such as he judged would do best for the seat and back of a chair, which he also drove in the ground near his table ; and having twisted the branches, which grew to them, with each other, from back to front, and across again, he weaves smaller between, bottoming his seat ; which completes the furniture of his habitation.

That care being over, another succeeds, of a far greater moment : Here's a dwelling, said he, to shelter me from the weather, and a bed to rest this poor body of mine ; but where is food to support it ? here have I subsisted near one month upon a fish, which the same dreadful storm, that took away forty lives, sent me to maintain my own. Well, since kind Providence has been pleased

to preserve my life preferable to so many, who fatally perished in that dismal accident, I am bound, in gratitude, to hold it precious ; and since my fish is almost gone, and I am not certain of more, I must by degrees bring myself to live upon roots, which I hope will never be wanting, being the natural product of this island : So I must eat of the small remnant of my fish, but now-and then, to make it hold out longer. Dainties or plenty were not allotted for him that was doomed to slavery, but labour, and hard living ; and, if I meet here the latter, heaven be praised, I have escaped the worse ; I can take my rest, and stand in no dread of any severe inspector and task-master.

Now being entirely reconciled to the state of life Providence, on whom he fully depended, had been pleased to call him to, he resolves to make provision of those excellent roots : and with his hatchet he cuts a piece of a tree, wherewith he makes a shovel, in order to dig them up with more ease : with this instrument he went to the place where he had observed they grew thickest, which being near the monkeys quarters, they came down from off their trees in great numbers, grinning as if they would have flown at him ; which made him stop a while : He might indeed, with the instrument in his hand, have killed several, and perhaps dispersed the rest ; but would not : Why, said he, should I add barbarity to injustice ? It is but natural and reasonable for every creature to guard and defend their own : This was given them by nature for food, which I come to rub them of ; and since I am obliged to get them for my subsistence, if I am decreed to be here another season, I will set some in a place distant from theirs for my own use.

Having stood still a considerable time, those animals, seeing he did not go forwards, each went and scratched up for itself, afterwards retiring ; giving him the opportunity to dig up a few for himself : And as he was not come to the place where they grew thick, he laid them in small heaps as he dug them up ; while those fly creatures would, whilst he was digging up more, come down from the trees, where they stood hid among the leaves, and steal them away : which obliged him to be contented for that time with as many as his pockets would hold, resolving to bring something next time which would contain a larger quantity ; and fearing those animals, which are naturally very cunning, should dig them up, and hide them,

them, he comes early the morning following to make his provision : And for want of a sack to put them in, he takes his jacket, which he buttons up, and ties at the sleeves ; and as he had observed, that every root had abundance of little off-sets hanging at it by small fibres, he pulled off his shirt also, of which he makes another sack to put them in.

Being naked, all but his breeches, and the day being pretty hot, he thought he had as good pull them off too, and fill them, his jacket being but short, and therefore holding but few : Taking, therefore, his bundle in one arm, and having the shovel in the other hand, he goes to the place he intended to do the day before ; and expecting to find the same opposition as he did then. he brought with him some of the roots he had dug up the preceding day. in order to throw them amongst those animals, and so quiet them : But to his great wonder, and as great satisfaction, those creatures which the time before opposed him with noise, and offensive motions, let him now pass by quietly, without offering to meddle with any when dug up, though he had laid them up by heaps in their way, and stood at a considerable distance from them.

This surprising reverence from those creatures, set him upon deep reflections on what could be the cause thereof ; whether it might not proceed from the proximity of their shape and his : But then, said he, my stature and colour of skin is so different from theirs, that they cannot but distinguish I am not of their kind : No, it must be a remnant of that awe, entailed by nature upon all animals, to that most noble and compleat master-piece of the creation, called Man, which, now appearing in the state he was first created in, and undisguised by clothes, renew an image of that respect he has forfeited by his fatal transgression, which ever since obliged him to hide the beauty of his fabric under a gaudy disguise, which often renders him ridiculous to the rest of mankind, and generally obnoxious to all other creatures ; making a pride of what he ought to be ashamed of : Well, adds he, since my clothes bred the antipathy, I will remove that cause, which will both suit the nature of those animals, and my own circumstances. From that time he resolves to go naked, till the hardness of the weather obliged him to put something on.

Having

Having picked up a sufficient quantity of off-sets to stock about two acres of land, he returns home, leaving behind him a considerable number of roots dug up for those poor animals, which attended him all the time he was at work, without offering to touch one till he was gone.

Being come home, he fixes upon a spot of ground near his habitation, and digs it up as well as he could with his wooden instrument, in order to sow his seed: Which having compassed in about twenty days, he implores a blessing upon his labour, and leaves it to time to bring it forth. Thus having finished the most necessary work about his barrack, he resolves to take a more particular view of the island, which till then he had not time to do; and taking a long staff in his hand, he walks to the lake, which parts the land from the rock, and goes along the side of it quite round the island, finding all the way new subjects of admiration: On the left hand stood a rampart made of one solid stone, adorned by nature with various forms and shapes beyond the power of art to imitate; some parts challenging a likeness to a city and clusters of houses, with here and there a steeple standing above the other buildings; another place claiming a near resemblance to a distant squadron of men of war in a line of battle: Further, it bears comparison with the dull remains of some sumptuous edifice, ruined by the often-repeated shocks of time, inciting, the beholders to condolence for the loss of its former beauty. At some distance from thence the prospect of a demolished city is presented to the sight; in another place large stones like small mountains, laid, as it were a-top of one another, impress the mind with an idea of the tower of Babel; and on the right-hand a most pleasant land covered with beautiful green grass, like chamomile, and here and there a cluster of trees, composing most agreeable groves, among a vast number of fine lotty trees of divers heights and shapes, which stood more distant, whose irregularity added much to the delightfulness of the place,

As he was walking on, admiring all these wonderful works of nature, having caught cold (not being used to go naked) he happened to sneeze opposite to a place in the rock, which hollowed in after the manner of the inside of some cathedral, and was answered by a multitude of different voices issuing from that place: The agreeableness.

bleness of the surprize induced him to rouse those echoes a second time, by giving a loud hem; which was, like his sneezing, repeated in different tones, but all very harmonious: Again he hemmed, and was so delighted with the repetition, that he could have spent hours in the hearing of it: But why should I, said he, waste those melodious sounds, so fit to relate the Almighty's wonderful works, and set forth his praise? Immediately he sung several psalms and hymns, with as much emulation and devotion, as if he had been in company with numbers of skilful and celebrated choristers.

Having spent a considerable time there with much pleasure, he proceeds in his walk, being resolved to make that his place of worship for the future, and attend it twice a day constantly.

About three or four hundred paces farther, having turned on the other side of a jetting-out part of the rock, he was stopt a second time by another surprizing product of nature; a large stone, growing out of the rock, advancing quite over the lake at the bottom of it, representing something of a human shape, out of the breast whereof issued a fountain of exceeding clear water, as sweet as milk; and, when looked at fronting, was like an antique piece of architecture, which in old times they built over particular springs; and on the other side appeared as if springing from the nostrils of a sea-horse: These three so very different, and yet rightly compared likenesses, being offered by one and the same unaltered object, made him curious to examine what parts of every resemblance helped to make out the others: And having spent a considerable time in the examination, he found every thing, which the front had likeness of, was employed in making the side-representation, by being in some places shortened, and in others lengthened; according to the point of sight.

Being satisfied about that subject, he enters upon another as puzzling: The basin, in which the fountain ran, which was about five yards distant from whence the water did spring, being about nine feet over every way, without any visible place to evacuate its over-complement, and yet keeping the same height, without dashing or running over, although the stream that fell into it ran as big as his wrist. Having a long time searched into the cause, without any satisfaction, he conjectures it must make its way

out somewhere under-ground ; so went on, till he came to the place he had begun his march at, which ended that day's work.

Having been round the island, which to the best of his judgment, was about ten or eleven miles in circumference, of an oblong form, going in and out in several places, extending from north to south, the south end near twice as broad as the opposite ; he resolves to employ the next day in viewing the inside. Then recommending himself to Providence, as he never failed to do, both morning and evening, he goes to bed ; but not being sleepy, the over-active faculty in man roves from one subject to another : His mind runs from his present station to his former, re-assuming his past pleasures, which he never must hope to meet with again, and calls in all the evils his present condition of life lays him exposed to. These dull thoughts quite dislodge his late born hopes of heaven's assistance, and shake his future dependence on Providence : He snarls and quarrels with his fate, and repines at his condition ; which not being in his power to mend, he wishes for eternal sleep to free his mind of tumults and cares, which croud upon him.

Sleep was granted him, but not rest : His repining is chastised with terrifying dreams of the punishment he had been condemned to ; all his past troubles came upon him in the most grievous and shocking manner they could appear : his raging wives at once fall upon him, exerting their utmost malice and revenge, which he cannot avoid, but by embracing either an ignominious death, or a severe and vile bondage. These terrible aspects put him in the same pains and agony, as if already feeling the assigned torment.

Having in his dream, with hard strugglings, escaped death, he finds himself in an exceeding hot country, his half naked body continually bending to the hard and dry ground, grabbing round a nauseous reed for fulsome worms ; every now-and-then lashed by a cross and severe task-master, who hurries him to work : In this great perplexity he cries out, Oh, that I had ended my woful days at the shameful gibbet ! Sure it would have been a milder fate ! At which he awakened in such a consternation, that it was several minutes before he could be thoroughly satisfied it was but a dream. Having recalled his dispersed senses, he made this reflection ; that it really was the
penalty

penalty he had been sentenced to, and by Providence preserved from. Setting then his present condition in opposition to that, he acknowledges his ingratitude, for which he secretly repents, and on his knees, with weeping eyes, asks pardon, imploring the continuance of Providence's protection; resolving for the future, never to think or wish to change that state of life it had pleased heaven to place him in; wholly dedicating the remains of his days to God's worship: Holding henceforth, as inestimable, the happiness of being freed from those cares, which daily flew on them who are concerned with the world, which might cool or slacken his duty to so great a benefactor.

Having entirely resigned himself to the will of God, he casts off all cares, and banishes from his mind all that could create any; resolving to employ those hours that ran between the intervals of time he had dedicated to divine worship, in the contemplation of the many wonderful works of nature, manifested in such various manners all over the island.

So he walks along the land, which he found very level, covered with a delightful green grass, and adorned with trees of divers sorts, shapes, and height, inhabited with several sorts of curious singing birds, of various colours and notes, which entertained him with their melodious harmony: In some places stood a cluster of trees, composing agreeable and delightful groves, proceeding from only one main body, whose lower branches, being come to a certain length, applied to the earth for immediate nourishment, as it were, to ease the old stem that produced them; and so became a plant and did the same.

Having for some time admired the agreeableness and curiosity of the plant, by which nature seemed to give human-kind instructions; and looking about, if perchance he could find any thing in his way for his own proper use; he took along with him a sample of every different herb he thought might be eatable. Crossing the island in several places, he comes at a most delightful pond, about two hundred yards in length, and one hundred and fifty wide, with fine trees spreading their branchy limbs over its brink, which was surrounded with a beautiful bank, covered with divers kinds of flowers and herbs, so naturally intermixed, which compleated it in ornament and
conveniency,

conveniency, as tho' intended by nature for more than mortal's use.

Having walked several times around it, with much pleasure, he sat down a while upon its bank, to admire the clearness of the water, through which to his great comfort he saw many different sorts of fish, of various bignesses, shapes and colours. Heaven be praised! said he, here is a stock of fresh water fish to supply me with food, if the sea should fail me.

Being sufficiently diverted with their chasing one another, which were of many beautiful and different colours, and made a most delightful scene, he proceeds in his walk, and goes to the south of the island, where he finds another subject of admiration; a noble and spacious wood, whose shades seemed to be made for the abode of peace and pleasure: He walked round it with much delight, which made the time seem short; yet he could guess it to be no less than two miles about.

Having viewed the outside, whose extraordinary agreeableness incited in him an unsurmountable desire to get into it, but where he was afraid to venture, lest there might be destructive creatures; yet having recommended himself to the care of Providence, he ventured into it, finding several pleasant walks, some strait, edged with lotty trees, as tho' planted for pleasure; others crooked and winding, bordered with a thick hedge of pimentoes, which cast a most fragrant smell: Here-and-there a large cluster of bushes and dwarf-trees, wherein sheltered several different kinds of wild beasts and fowls. Sure, said he, this island was never intended by nature to lie waste, but rather reserved to be the happy abode of some, for whom heaven had a particular benefit in store: Here is every thing sufficient, not only for the support, but also for the pleasure of life; Heaven make me thankful, that I am the happy inhabitant of so blessed a land!

Being hungry and tired with walking, he goes home, in order to get some victuals, and, having made a fire, he boils a slice of his salt fish with some roots, and then the herbs he brought with him, which proved of divers tastes and all excellent; some eating like artichokes, others like asparagus and spinach. Now, said he, what can I wish for more! Here I possess a plentiful land, which produces both fowls, flesh, and fish; bears excellent greens and roots, and affords the best of water, which by nature was
ordained

ordained for man's drink. Pomp and greatness are but pageantry, which oftentimes prove more prejudicial to the actor, than diverting to the beholder: Ease and indulgence are apt to breed the gout, and various distempers, which make the rich more wretched than the poor; now these evils, thanks to my Maker, I stand in no danger of, having but what is sufficient, which never can do any harm.

Thus thoroughly easy in his mind, he proposes to spend the afternoon at the outside of the rock, in viewing the sea, and looking for oysters; so takes in his hand his long staff to grabble in holes; and his breeches which he ties at the knees, to bring them in. Being come to a place of the rock he had never been at before, he sees at a distance, something like linen hanging upon it; which, when come at, he found to be the main-sail of a ship, with a piece of the yard fastened to it: Alas! said he, a dismal token of insatiable ambition! which makes men often lose their lives in seeking what they seldom find; and, if they ever do, 'tis commonly attended with a world of care. Happy is he who limits his desires to his ability; aspiring not above his reach, and is contented with what nature requires. Then he falls a ripping the sheet from the yard, which he finds in one place tyed with one of his garters, (having himself made use of it for want of another string) heaven be praised, said he, this is no effect of another shipwreck, but a fragment of the unfortunate ship, whose loss was my redemption; which reflection made him shed tears.

Having ripped the sail in pieces, he rolls them up in such bundles as he could conveniently carry, and lays them down till he had got a few oysters, proceeding to grope in holes with his stick as he went on.

About forty paces farther, he finds a chest in a cleft of the rock, which had been washed up there by the violence of the late storm: Heaven! said he, more fatal effects of fate's cruelty, and man's temerity! Was the sea made for men to travel on? Is there not land enough for his rambling mind to rove! Must he hunt after dangers, and ~~po~~ death to defiance? What is the owner of this the better for it now! Or who can be the better in a place so remote, and the access to it so difficult? being not to be approached but on the wings of Providence, and over the back of death. Now, was this full of massy gold, or yet richer things, I thank my God, I am above the use of it;

yet I'll take it home: It was sent hither by Providence, perhaps for the relief of some, necessitated and destitute. Then going to lift it, he could not; therefore was obliged to fetch his hatchet to beat it open, that he might take away what was in it by degrees. Having taken as much of the sail-cloth as he could conveniently carry, with the few oysters he had got, he went home, and fetched the tool, wherewith he wrenched the chest open, from which he took a suit of clothes, and some wearing linen: These said he neither the owner, nor I, want; so laid them down: The next thing he took out, was a roll of several sheets of parchment, being blank indentures and leases; these, said he, are instruments of the law, and often applied to injustice; but I'll alter their mischievous properties, and make them records of heaven's mercies, and Providence's wonderful liberality to me, so, instead of being the ruin of some, they may chance to be the reclaiming of others. At the bottom of the chest lay a rundlet of brandy, and a Cheshire cheese, a leather bottle full of ink, with a parcel of pens, and a penknife: As for these said he, they are of use; the pens, ink, and parchment have equipped me to keep a journal, which will divert and pass away a few anxious hours: As for the cheese and brandy, they will but create me new cares: Before I had them, I wanted them not: now, the benefit and comfort I shall find in them, when gone, will make me hanker after them most; I wish I had still been without them; but now they are here, it would be a sin to let them be lost. I'll take them home and only use them at my need; which will make them both hold out the longer, and me grow less fond of them.

So, by degrees, he takes home the chest, and what was it; and now having materials to begin his journal, he immediately fell to work, that for want of other books, he might, at his leisure, peruse his past transactions, and the many mercies he had received from heaven; and that after his decease, whoever is directed thither by Providence, upon reading his wonderful escapes in the greatest dangers: his miraculous living, when remote from human assistance; in the like extremity, might not despair. Thus he begins from his being eight years old (as well as he can remember, he heard an old aunt of his say) to the day of his being cast away, which happened on the 10th of July,

July 1675, being then twenty-eight years of age, resolving to continue it to his death.

Thus having written the preceding account of the shipwreck, and what had befallen him since, to the finding of the chest, which was on the 15th of September 1675, he proceeds: But calling to mind his last dream but one, which did warn him to make provision against winter, and the season being pretty far advanced, he gathers a good store of fuel and roots: begins to line the outside of his barrack with a wall of turf, and lays the same a-top to keep out the wet; And as he now-and-then found small shell-fish and oysters upon the rock, he makes a bridge over the lake which in warm weather he used to wade, that in winter he might go over dry; So, having completed his bridge, which was made of two strong poles, which reached from the land to the rock, and several lesser branches laid across pretty close, he retires home, the day being far spent: The following night, being the 18th of September, there arose a violent storm, attended with dreadful claps of thunder, which the many echoes from the rock, rendered more terrible; and lightnings flashing in a most frightful manner, succeeded each other, before the preceding was well out of the sky, which put poor loansome Quarll in such a consternation, that (notwithstanding his reliance on heaven's protection) he would have given the world (had it been in his possession) to have some company; solitude adding much to his terror and affliction.

The glorious rising of the next morning's sun having laid the mortifying rage of the blustering winds, Quarll, whose late alarm was hardly quelled, still suspecting its most reviving rays to be terrifying glances, and flashes of lightning: but having lain a while, and hearing no noise, but that which still raged in his mind, was at last convinced the storm was over; and so gets up with a resolution to go and see if he could discern any effects of the late tempest.

Being come at the other side of the rock, he saw indeed, surprising objects, but not afflicting; the mischief, that was done, being to the inhabitants of the sea only, a vast number of which had, by the wind, been dis-elemented; a quantity of stately whittings, fine mackerels, large herrings, divers sizes of codlings, and several other sorts of fish, with a great number of shells, of different

shapes and bignesses, lying up and down upon the rock. Heaven be praised ! said he, instead of damage to bewail, what thanks have I now to return for this mighty benefit ! Here the powerful agent of mischief is, by kind Providence, made a minister of good to me : Make me thankful ! I am now provided for all the next winter ; and yet longer ; by which time I am certain to have a fresh supply.

† *He who, when in distress,
To God makes his address,
And his bounties implore ;
Is sure and may depend,
That relief he will send,
And at need help the poor.*

Thus having taken up as many fish as he could hold in his arms, he carries them home, and brings his shift, which he used instead of a sack : So, at several times, he brought away all the fish and as many of the shells as he had occasion for ; of some of which he made boilers and stew-pans, of others dishes and plates : Some he kept water in, and others fish in pickle ; so that he was stocked with necessary vessels as well as provision.

Being very weary with often going backwards and forwards with his fish, which took up all that day to bring them home, he sits down to rest himself ; and the rundlet of brandy lying by, he was tempted to take a sup, which was at that time very much wanted, his spirit being very low ; but was loth to taste it, lest he should grow fond of the liquor, and grieve after it when gone : Some moments were spent before he could come to a resolution : At last having considered the use of it which suited his present occasion, he concludes to take a dram, and to use it like a cordial, as it was first intended for ; but the vessel, out of which he drank, being at his mouth, the cordial turns to a nectar, one gulp decoys another down ; so the intended dram

† Lest the reader should think, these and the following verses to be the effect of my own brain, I solemnly protest, they are what I found in his memoirs, written with his own hand.

dram becomes a hearty draught. The pleasantness of the liquor made him forget its nature; so that poor Quarril, who had, for the space of near three months before, drank nothing but water, was presently overcome with the strength of the brandy, and fell asleep in his chair, with the rundlet on his bare lap, from whence it soon fell to the ground, and being unstopt, ran all out.

Being awakened with hunger, having slept from evening till almost noon of another day, which he knew not whether the succeeding or the next to it; seeing what had happened, he was sorely vexed, and could have wept at the accident; but, considering the liquor which occasioned it, might perhaps, in time, have caused greater mischief, he soon was reconciled with the loss, but could not with that of the right order of the days, which having intirely forgot, hindered the going on of his journal; so was obliged to make only a memorial. That damage being repaired, another appears of a far greater consequence; the Sunday is lost, which he had so carefully observed to that time: How can that be made up? Now, said he, shall I daily be in danger of breaking the sabbath, knowing not the day. Oh fatal liquor! that ever thou wert invented to cause so much mischief! murder, adulteries, and blasphemies, are daily, by thy most pernicious use, occasioned. But why should I lay the blame upon the use, when it is the abuse that does the hurt? and exclaim against a thing, which being taken in moderation, is of so great a benefit in reviving a fainting heart, raising sinking spirits, warming cold and decayed nature, and asswaging several pains: So blames himself highly for gratifying his appetite with that wherewith he only ought to have refreshed nature; and since that often misguided faculty had prompted him to commit the fault, he dedicated that day, in which he became sensible of it, to prayers and fasting; and every seventh, from that he sets apart for divine worship only, which he hoped would keep him from breaking the commandments for keeping holy the sabbath day; it being not certain, that the day appointed by the church for that purpose was the very day God had sanctified for rest: So went to the place where the echoes, in many different and melodious sounds repeated his thanksgiving to the Almighty, which he had fixed upon to pay his devotion, and there spent the rest of the day in prayers and singing of psalms.

The next morning, having breakfasted with some of his usual bread, and a slice of the cheese he found in the chest, he goes about curing his fish, in order to salt them: Have laid by as many for the present use, as he thought he could eat whilst fresh, he improves the fair weather to dry one part of the remainder, and keeps the rest in pickle.

The winter being near at hand, and the weather growing damp and cold, hinders him from his walks; so being confined within doors, he employs his idle hours in beautifying his utensils, which were not to be used on the fire; and bestowed some pains in scraping and polishing the rest of his shells, some as fine as though they had been makers of pearl; which made them not only more fit for their intended uses, but also a great ornament to his barrack, which he shelved round with plaited twigs after the manner of his table, and so set them upon it.

Thus he spent the best part of the winter, making no farther remarks, but that it was very sharp attended with high winds, abundance of hail and snow, which obliged him to make a broom to sweep it away from about his hut, which otherwise would have been damaged by it.

But shivering winter, having exhausted his frosty stores, and weary with vexing nature, retired; Boreas also, grown faint with hard blowing, is forced to retreat into his cave; gentle Zephyrus (who till then kept him in his temperate cell) now comes forth to usher in the blooming spring; so mildly slips on to inform nature of her favourites approach, who at the joyful news put on her gay enamelled garb, and out of her rich wardrobe supplies all vegetables with new vesture, to welcome the most lovely guest. The feathered choristers also receive new strength; their tender lungs are repaired from the injuries the foggy and misty air did occasion; and, thus revived, are placed on every budding tree, to grace his entrance with their harmonious notes.

Quarll also, whom bad weather had confined within doors a considerable time, which had in a great measure numbed his limbs, and dulled his senses, now finds himself quite revived: He no longer can keep within; the fair weather invites him out; the singing birds on every side call to him; Nature itself fetches him out to behold the treasures.

Having

Having with unspeakable pleasure walked some time, diverted with the sweet melody of various kinds of singing birds, and the sight of abundance of different sorts of bloomed trees, and blooming flowers; all things within the island inspiring joy; he had the curiosity to go and view the sea: So goes over his bridge; and then, at the other side of the rock, where he finds more objects, requiring as much admiration, but affording a great deal less pleasure; vast mountains of ice, floating up and down threatening all that came in their way.

These terrible effects of the winter, which to that time he was a stranger to, occasioned his making this reflection:

*He, who on billows roves, riches or wealth to gain,
Is ever in danger, and labours oft in vain;
If fortune on him smiles, giving his toils success,
Each day new cares arise, which mar his happiness.
The only treasure, then, worth laying up in store,
Is a contented mind, which never leaves one poor:
He is not truly rich, who hankers after more.*

So, having returned heaven thanks for his happy state, he creeps to the north east side of the rock, at the foot of which lay an extraordinary large whale, which the late high wind had cast there, and died for want of water. If this, said he, is all the damage that has been done last winter, it may be borne; so went down and measured the length of it, which was about thirty yards, and proportionable in bigness: There were shoals of small fishes swimming about it in the shallow water wherein it lay, as rejoicing at its death: Thus, said he, the oppressed rejoice at a tyrant's fall, What numbers of these have been destroyed to make this monstrous bulk of fat! Well, happy are they, who, like me, are under heaven's government only. So with his knife, which he always carried in his pocket, cuts several slices of the whale, and throws them to the small fishes, saying, 'tis but justly ye should at least, feed on that which so long fed on you: and, as oil ran, in abundance, from the places he had cut the slices out of, it vexed him to see that wasted, which might turn to good money: But why, said he, should I be disturbed at it? What use have I for any? Providence takes
none

none it gives me all gratis. So goes on feeling for oysters with his staff which he always walked with.

Having at last found a hole, where by their rattling at the bottom with his staff, he judged their might be a pretty many, he marks the place, and goes home to contrive some instrument to drag them up, being yet too cold for him to go into the water; and as he had no tool but his knife and hatchet, both improper to make a hole in a board, as requisite to make a rake, which was wanting for that purpose; he beat out the end of his chest, in which there was a knot: So having driven it out, he fastens the small end of a pole to it. Thus equipped, he went and raked up oysters, which added one dish to his ordinary, and sauce to others; yet at length his stomach growing qualmish with eating altogether fish, and drinking nothing but water withal, he wishes he could have a little flesh, which he might easily, there being animals enough in the wood apparently fit for food; but then he must deprive them of their lives, barely to make his own more easy.

Thus he debates with himself for some time, whether or no it would not be injustice for him (who only by a providential accident was brought thither to save his life) now to destroy those creatures to whom nature has given a being, in a land out of man's reach to disturb: Yet nature requires what seems to be against nature for me to grant: I am faint, and like to grow worse, the longer I abstain from flesh.

Having paused a while; why, said he, should I be so scrupulous? Were not all things created for the use of man? Now, whether is it not worse to let a man perish, than to destroy any other creature for his relief? nature craves it, and providence gives it: now, not to use it in necessity, is undervaluing the gift.

So, having concluded upon catching some of those animals he had seen in the wood, he considers by what means, having no dogs to hunt, nor guns to shoot: Having paused a while, he resolves upon making gins, wherewith he had seen hares caught in Europe: Thus, taking some of the cords which he found with the sail at the outside of the rock, he goes to work, and makes several, which he fastens, at divers gaps in the thickset, within the wood, through which he judged that sort of beast, he had a mind for went.

Impatient

Impatient to know the success of his snares, he gets up betimes the next morning and goes to examine them, in one of which he found a certain animal something like a fawn, the colour of a deer, but feet and ears like a fox, and as big as a well-grown hare? He was much rejoiced at his game, whose mouth he immediately opened, to see if he could find out whether it fed upon grass, or lived upon prey, the creature being caught by the neck, and strangled with struggling, before it died had brought up in its throat some of the greens it had been eating, which very much pleased him; accounting those which lived upon flesh as bad as carrion.

Having returned thanks for his good luck, he takes it home in order to dress part of it for his dinner; so castrates and guts it: But its proving to be a female, big with three young ones, grieved him to the heart, and made him repent of making those killing nooses: What pity, said he, so many lives should be lost, and creatures wasted! One would have served me four days: and here are four killed at once. Well, henceforth, to prevent the like evil, I'll take alive what I just want, and save all the females. So, having stuck a long stick at both ends in the ground, making a half-circle, he hangs one quarter of the animal upon a string before a good fire, and so he roasts it.

His dinner being ready, having said grace, he sets to eating with an uncommon appetite: and whether it was the novelty of the dish, or that the meat did really deserve the praise; he really thought he never eat any thing of flesh, till then, comparable to it, either for taste or tenderness.

Having dined both plentifully and deliciously, he most zealously returns kind Providence thanks for the late, and all favours received; then, pursuant to his resolution, he goes about making nets, in order to take his game alive for the future; and, as he had no small twine to make it with, he was obliged to unravel some of the sail which he luckily had by him; and with the thread, twist some of the bigness he judged proper for that use.

Having made a sufficient quantity, he makes a couple of nets, about four feet square, which he fastens in the room of the killing snares: so retired, and resolved to come and examine them every morning.

Several

Several days passed without taking any thing, so that he wanted flesh a whole week; which did begin to disorder his stomach, but not his temper; being entirely resigned to the will of Providence, and fully contented with whatever heaven was pleased to send.

One afternoon, which was not his customary time of day to examine his nets, being too visible in the day time for game to run in; he happened to walk in the wood, to take full dimensions thereof so chanced to go by his nets; in one which were taken two animals, as big as a kid six weeks old, of a bright dun, their horns upright and strait, their shape like a stag, most curiously limbed, a small tuft of hair on each shoulder and hip. By their horns, which were but short, they appeared to be very young, which rejoiced him the more, being in hopes to tame those which he did not want for present use; so carried them home, joyful of his game, depending upon a good dinner; but was sadly disappointed: The animals he found were antelopes (calling to mind he had seen them in his travels) which, proving both females, he had made a resolution to preserve. Tho' they were too young to be with kind, and he in great need of flesh, yet he would not kill them; so with cords, fastens them to the outside of his lodge; and with constant feeding them in two month's time made them so tame, that they followed him up and down; which added much to the pleasure he already took in his habitation, which by that time was covered with green leaves, both top and sides; the stakes it was made of having struck root, and shot out young branches; whose strength increasing that summer, to fill up the vacancy between each plant, he pulled the turfs, wherewith he had covered the outside and top of the hut between them, to keep the cold out in the winter.

His former hut being now become a pleasant arbour, gave him encouragement to bestow some pains about it towards the embellishment of it, which seemed to depend on being well attended. He resolved upon keeping it pruned and watered, the better to make it grow thick and fast, which answered his intent; for, in three years time, the stems of every plant that composed the arbour, were grown quite close, and made a solid wall of about six inches thick, covered with green leaves without, which lay most regular and even, and within had a most agreeable smooth bark of a pleasant olive-colour.

His

His late arbour being, by his care and time, and nature's assistance, become a matchless lodge, as intended by nature for something more than human guests, he now consults to make it as commodious as beautiful. Here is, said he, a delightful dwelling, warm in the winter, and cool in the summer; delightful to the eye, and comfortable to the body; pity it should be employed to any use, but repose and delight! So resolved upon making a kitchen near it. Thus having fixed upon a place convenient at the side of his lodge, about six feet from it, twelve in length, and eight in breadth, which he enclosed with the turfs that covered the outsides of his arbour, before it was sufficiently thick to keep out the cold; then having laid sticks across the top of the walls, which were about eight feet high, he lays turf thereon, and so covers it, leaving an open place for the smoak to go out.

The outside being done, he goes about inside necessities, as fire places, to roast and boil at; thus cuts a hole in the ground, at a small distance from the wall, after the manner of stew-stoves in noblemen's kitchens; then at another place, he sets two flat stones, about eight or nine inches broad, and one foot long, edgeways, opposite to one another; near two feet asunder; then puts a third in the same manner, at the end of the other two; so makes a fire-place fit to roast at. Then for other conveniences, he weaves twigs about sticks, stuck in the wall on one side of the kitchen, where he lays the shells fit for utensils, which both adorned and furnished it.

Having completed that piece of work, he goes and visits his plantations, which he finds in a thriving condition: the roots being, in six months time, grown from the bigness of a pea (as they were when first set) to that of an egg: His antelopes, also, were come to their full growth, and complete beauty, which exceeded most four-footed beasts; having a majestic presence, body and limbs representing a stag, and the noble march of a horse: So every thing concurred to his happiness. For which, having returned his liberal benefactor his grateful acknowledgments, he thinks on means to prevent any obstructions that may intercept the continuation thereof; and as the want of clothes was the only cause he could think of, to make him uneasy, having but the jacket and hose which were given him on board to save his own clothes,

clothes, which, when worn out, he could not recruit; therefore to accustom himself to go without, he thins those he had, so takes away the lining from the outside of his cloathing, in order to wear the thickest in the coldest weather, and so thins his dress by degrees, till at last, he went quite naked.

Having thus concluded, as being the best shift necessity could raise him, he falls to ripping his jacket, in the lining whereof he finds seven peas, and three beans, which were got in at a hole in the corner of the pocket.

Those few made him wish for more, which he had no room to hope for, they being raised by seed, which the island did not produce: These few, said he, which at present are hardly sufficient to satisfy a woman's longing, may with time and industry, be improved into a quantity large enough to serve me for a meal; then lays them up against a proper time to set them: so spent the remainder of the summer in walking about the island, watering his lodge, weeding his root plantation, attending his nets, which now-and-then supplied him with an antelope or goat, to eat at intervals between fish he commonly found on the rock after high winds and storms; never failing to visit the sea three or four times a week, according as the weather did prove; thus diverting many anxious hours with variety of objects that element affords. Sometimes he had the pleasure of seeing great whales chasing one another, spouting large streams of water out of their gills and nostrils; at other times numbers of beautiful dolphins rolling amongst the waves; now-and-then a quantity of strange monstrous fish playing on the surface of the sea, some whereof had heads (not common to fishes) like those of hogs; others not unlike those of dogs, calves, horses, lions, bulls, goats, and several other creatures: Some chasing another sort; which to avoid being taken, would quit their element, and seek refuge in the air, and fly some yards above the water; till their fins, being dry, obliged them to plunge in again.

These pastimes being generally succeeded with bad weather, and dreadful storms, checked the pleasure they gave, with a dread of the evil that threatened to follow. Thus commiserating the case of those whose misfortune is to be exposed to them; having spent some time in reflection, he goes to his usual devotion; and calling to mind, that in all that time he never saw a young fish in it, he conjectured

tured that something might destroy the small ones; and as he imagined so it proved: For, at his approach a large fowl flew out of the pond with a fish in his bill, being too large for it to swallow.

At that distance, the bird being also upon the wing, he could neither discern colour nor make; but he had the satisfaction of discovering the cause why the fishes did not increase, they being devoured when young by that creature; which to prevent for the future, he studies means to kill the destroyer, nets not being proper instruments; it being requisite for that purpose, to have one all round, as also to cover the pond, which was impossible by reason of its largeness; and a less being of no use; the birds probably not coming to one certain place. He wished for a gun, and ammunition fitting, as being the most probable things to succeed; but no such instrument being within his reach, he ponders again; during which time a cross-bow offers itself to his mind, but is as distant from his reach as the gun: 'Tis true, there was stuff enough in the island to make many, but no tools but a hatchet and a pocket knife; wherewith, if he made shift to cut and shape a bow, he could not make a latch and spring necessary to it; so he must not think on't: Yet, a bow being the only thing he could apply to, he goes about it forthwith. Thus having picked a branch of a tree, which had the resemblance of a yew, and as tough, of which they are sometimes made, he, with the tools he had, made shift to make one, of about six feet long, and arrows of the same, which he hardens and straightens over the fire; then having slit them at one end, about two or three inches, he slips in a bit of parchment, cut sharp at one end, and about three inches at the other; then ties the end close, to keep it in, which served for feathers; and, with the ravelling of some of the sail, he makes a string to it.

Thus equipped for an archer, wanting nothing but skill, which is only to be gained by practice, he daily exercises the shooting at a mark for the space of a fortnight; in which time he made such an improvement, that in three shots he would hit a mark of about three inches square, at near fifty paces distance.

Being sufficiently skilled, he goes and lies in wait for his desired game; so places himself behind a tree, as near

to the pond as he could, whither the bird came in a few hours after.

The creature being pitched upon the bank, never stood still, but kept running round, watching for a sizeable fish fit to swallow; so that he had no opportunity to shoot: 'Till having, at last, spied out one, it launched itself into the pond, but raised more easily, which gave him time to take aim; nevertheless, he missed it, being in motion; but when come to the top, he struck it thro' the body, as it opened its wings, and laid it flat on the other side of the pond. He took it up, wonderfully pleased at his good success the first time of his practising his new-acquired art; yet, having taken notice of the bird's beauty, he had a regret for his death, tho' he might, in time, have rued its living; the stock of fish weekly decreasing, by his own catching, one now-and-then with a small net he made for that use, when short of other provisions; and their recruiting prevented by that bird's daily devouring their young.

The inexpressible beauty of the feathers, which were after the nature of a drake, every one distinguished from another by a rim round the edge thereof, about the breadth of a large thread, and of a changeable colour, from red to aurora and green; the ribs of a delightful blue, and the feathers pearl-colour, speckled with a bright yellow; the breast and belly (if it might be said to be of any particular colour) was that of a dove's feathers, rimmed like the back, diversly changing; the head, which was like that of a swan, for make, was purple also, changing as it moved; the bill like burnished gold; eyes like a ruby, with a rim of gold round it; the feet the same as the bill; the size of the bird was between a middling goose and a duck, and in shape resembling a swan.

Having bemoaned the death of that delightful creature, he carefully takes out its flesh, which, corrupting, would spoil the outside; then fills the skin with sweet herbs, which he dried for that use; and having sewed up the place he had cut open, to take the flesh out, he set it up in his lodge.

His good success in archery, made him love the exercise; so that what odd hours he had in the day (beside, those he set apart for his divine worship, and those necessary occupations about his lodge, plantations, and making

ing remarks) he bestowed in shooting at the mark; which in time made him so expert that he hardly would miss a standing mark the bigness of a dove, at forty or fifty yards distance, once in ten times; and would shoot tolerably well flying; having once occasion to try it upon a monstrous eagle, which often flew rounding over the place where his antelopes and goats fed, near his lodge; which he shot at, fearing it would damage them, and killed with the second arrow.

The summer being over, during which, having been much taken up about his habitation and plantation, he had neither time nor opportunity to make remarks, farther than that it was some days very showery, and for the most part generally very hot; but now the weather being grown somewhat cold, and the wind pretty sharp, he must be obliged to put on some clothes to keep it off; being as yet too tender to go any longer without; next to provide for his antelopes against the approaching winter; so makes a lodge for them, at the backside of his kitchen, with sticks, which he drove into the ground about two feet from the wall, and then bends them about three feet from the ground, and sticks them in the said wall, and smaller branches he interwove between them: He shuts up the front, and covers the top, leaving both ends open for the antelopes to go in at; then lays grass (which he dried on purpose) in the said lodge, for them to lie on. Thus, having dug up a considerable quantity of roots, and being already stocked with salt-fish, both dry and in pickle, he was pretty well provided, for his cattle and himself, against the ensuing winter, which proved much like the preceding one, only not so stormy.

The succeeding spring having awakened slumbering nature, and revived what the preceding hard season had caused to droop, every vegetable puts on new cloathing, and recovers its wonted beauty: each animal assumes fresh vigour; the beasts in the wood leap and bound for joy, and each bird on the trees sings for gladness. The whole creation is, as it were, repaired, and every creature decked with new life: Love, by nature's direction, for the encrease of every kind, warms their harmless breasts; each animal seeks a mate; our tame antelopes quit their abode, and range the woods for the relief ordained to quell their innocent passion; which being assuaged, they

return home, pregnant with young, to their master's great satisfaction; who, having given them over, was doubly rejoiced to see them come again in an increasing condition. Heaven be praised! said he, I shall have a flock of my own; and will not fear wanting.

So, having made fitting preparations against their kidding, he goes and examines the improvement of his new plantation, where he found his roots grown full as large as any of those that grew wild. Make me thankful! said he; I am now provided with all necessary food: I shall no more need to rob those poor creatures of that which nature had provided for their own proper use. Next he goes and views his small flock of peas and beans, which he found in a very promising case: So, whilst the weather was fair, he falls to clearing a spot of ground to set them in, as they increased.

Turning up the ground, he found several sorts of roots that looked to be eatable, some whereof were as big as a large carrot, others less. He broke a bit of every one; some of which breaking short, and not being stringy, he judged they might be eatable: Then he smells them; and finding the scent not disagreeable he tastes them. Some were sweetish, others sharp and hot, like horseradish; and those he proposes to use instead of spice. Sure, said he, these, being of a pleasant scent and flavour, cannot be of an offensive nature: So, having manured his ground, he takes a sample of every root which he judged eatable, and boils them, as the surest way to experience their goodness.

Most of them proved not only passable good, but extraordinary; some eating like parsnips, others almost like carrots, but rather more agreeable; some like beets and turnips; every one, in their several kinds, as good as ever he eat in England, but of different colours and make; some being bluish, others black; some red, and some yellow: These, tho' not wanted, having sufficient to gratify a nicer taste than his, were nevertheless extremely welcome, being somewhat like his native country fare and product: So having returned thanks for this most agreeable addition to his ordinary, he sets a mark to every herb which those roots bore, in order to get some of the seed to sow in a ground he would prepare: So, being provided with flesh, fish, herbs, and several sorts of roots, he goes and examines what improvement his peas and beans
have

have made ; which he found increased to admiration ; the seven peas having produced one thousand, and the three beans one hundred : Having returned thanks for that vast increase, he lays them by, in order to set them at a proper season, as he had done the year before.

By this time his antelopes had kidded, one of them having brought four young ones, and the second three : This vast addition to his provisions very much rejoiced him, being sure now not to want flesh at his need, which before he was in danger of ; finding but seldom any thing in his net : So makes account to live upon two of the young bucks while they lasted ; killing one as soon as fit for meat, and so now-and-then another, saving only five to breed ; one whereof should be a mate to keep the females in rutting time, from the wood ; lest, at one time or other, they should stay away for good and all.

The old ones being well fed, as he always took care to do, providing for them store of those greens he knew they loved ; as also boiled roots for them now-and-then, of which they are very fond ; the young ones thrive apace, and grew very fat ; so that in three weeks time they were large and fit to eat. He killed one ; which being roasted, proved to be more delicious than any house-lamb, sucking-pig, young fawn, or any other suckling whatever.

Having lived upon that, with now-and-then a little fish, about one month, which was as long as he could keep it eatable, having dressed it at two different times, five days interval ; eating the cold remains in several manners ; reserving one of the other two males for a time he should be scanted, and in want of flesh, but was unluckily disappointed by a parcel of large eagles, which flying one morning over the place where the young antelopes were playing, being of a gay, as well as active disposition, who launched themselves with precipitation upon the male he reserved for time of need, and one of the females which he kept for breed, seeing his beloved diverters carrying away by those birds of prey, he runs in for his bow, but came too late with it, the eagles being gone.

Having lost his too dear antelopes, especially the female, having doomed the male for his own eating, he hardly could forbear weeping, to think of their being cruelly torn to pieces by those ravenous creatures : Thus

having for some time lamented his loss, and bewailed their hard fate, he thinks on means to prevent the like evil for the time to come; and as his bow was not always at hand, he resolves upon making a net, and fastens it between the trees he saw them come in at.

The succeeding winter proving very wet and windy, gave him but little invitation to take his usual walks; so having every thing he had occasion for at hand, he kept close to his net-making; for which having twine to twist, and thread to ravel out, to make the said twine, kept him employed till the following spring, which came on apace.

Having finished his net, and every thing which belonged to it, he goes and fastens it to the trees, as he had proposed; then takes a walk to his new plantations, which he found in a thriving condition; for which, and other benefits already received, he resolves, as in duty bound, to attend at this usual place of worship, and sing thanksgiving psalms, which the hardness of the weather had kept him from all the late winter: but it coming into his mind, that whilst he was at his devotion, returning thanks for the fair prospect of a plentiful crop, his antelopes would break into the close, the hedge being as yet but thin, and devour the promising buds, which are the principal occasion of his devotion; this not altogether improper consideration puts a sad check to his religious intention: And though there was a vast obligation to prompt him to the performance of that part of his duty, yet he could not with wisdom run the hazard, out of mere devotion to lose so promising a crop, which he should never be able to retrieve; all his stock of seed being then in grass.

As he was debating in his mind between religion and reason, whether the latter ought not to be a director to the former, he perceived his antelopes making towards the peas, whither they, doubtless would have got in, had he not returned, and driven them another way: Which accident convinced him he might find a more proper time to go about his devotion; no man being required to worship to his prejudice: So, having put off his religious duty till he had better secured his peas and beans, he cuts a parcel of branches, wherewith he stops those gaps to prevent the creatures going in; and having completed his work, he goes to his devotion, adding to his usual thanksgiving,

giving, a particular collect for his luckily being in the way to prevent his being frustrated of the blessing heaven so fairly promised to bestow on his labours.

Having paid his devotion, he walks about the island, being all the way delighted with the birds celebrating their Maker's praise, in their different harmonious notes! Every thing in nature, said he, answers the end of its creation, but ungrateful man! who, ambitious to be wise, as his creator, only learns to make himself wretched. Thus he walks till the evening making several reflections on the different conditions of men, preferring his present state to that of Adam before his fall, who could not be sensible of happiness, having never known a reverse; which, otherwise he would have been more careful to prevent. Being come home and near bed-time, he first eats his supper; and then having performed his customary religious service, he goes to bed: The next morning, after paying his usual devotion, he takes a walk to his plantations, on which he implores a continuation of the prosperous condition they appear to be in; next, he goes to examine his nets, in which he finds a brace of fowls like ducks, but twice as large, and exceeding beautiful: The drake (which he knew by a coloured feather on his rump) was of a fine cinnamon colour upon his back, his breast of a mazarine blue, the belly of a deep orange, his neck green, head purple, his eyes, bill, and feet red; every colour changing most beautifully as they moved. The duck was also very beautiful, but of quite different colours, and much paler than the drake's.

The disappointment in catching those delightful fowls, instead of ravenous eagles, as he purposed, no-ways displeased him, but he rather was rejoiced to have such beautiful fowls to look at; yet it went much against his mind to deprive those creatures of their liberty (the greatest comfort in life) which nature took such pains to adorn: But, said he, they were created for the use of man: So, in keeping them for my pleasure, they will but answer the end of their creation. Their confinement shall be no stricter than my own; they shall have the whole island to range in. He then pinions them, puts them in the pond, and makes baskets for them to shelter in, which he places in the branches of those trees that hung closest to the water, taking particular care to feed them daily with roots roasted and boiled; and the guts of the fish, and other crea-
tures,

tures, he used for his own eating; which made them thrive mainly, and take to the place; so that they bred in their season.

The five antelopes had by this time kidded, and brought sixteen young ones: His peas and beans also were wonderfully improved, having that season enough to stock the ground the year following. Thus he returned kind Providence thanks for the vast increase, and concludes to live upon the young antelopes as long as they lasted, reserving only one for suck of the old ones, to keep them in milk, of which he had taken notice they had plenty, designing to draw it daily for his own use; so that in a little time he had enough to skim for cream, which he used for sauce instead of butter, and made small cheeses of the rest: Now having a pretty store of dairy-ware, he resolves to make a place to keep it in; the kitchen wherein he was obliged to lay his salt-fish (which commonly smells strong) not being a proper place for cream and milk: For which end he makes a dairy house at the other side of his dwelling, with branches of trees, after the manner of a close arbour, and thatches it over with grass; which answering the kitchen in form and situation, made uniform wings, that added as much to the beauty as convenience of the habitation.

Having completed his dairy, he proceeds in his resolution of making cheese, having learned the way in Holland; and for want of runnet to turn his milk, he takes some of the horse-radish seed, which, being of a hot nature had the same effect: Having curd to his mind, he seasons it to his palate; then with his hatchet, he cuts a notch round in the bark of a tree, about eighteen inches in circumference; and a second in the same manner, six below that: Then slits the circle, and with his knife gently opens it, parting it from the tree: Thus he makes as many hoops as he judged would contain his paste, which, being girded with cords to keep them from opening, he fills with the said paste, and lays them by, till fit to eat.

This being done, which completed his provisions, he returns thanks for those blessings which had been so liberally bestowed on him: Now, said he, heaven be praised! I exceed a prince in happiness: I have a habitation strong and lasting, beautiful and convenient, freehold, a store of comforts, with all necessaries of life free cost, which I
enjoy

enjoy with peace and pleasure uncontrouled : Yet I think there is still something wanting to complete my happiness : If a partner in grief lessens sorrow, certainly it must in delight, augment pleasure. What objects of admiration are here concealed, and, like a miser's treasure, hid from the world ! If man, who was created for bliss, could have been completely happy alone, he would not have had a companion given him : Thus he walks about thoughtful, till bed-time.

In that disposition he goes to bed, and soon fell asleep : The night also, being windy, added to his heavy disposition : But his mind finds no repose : It still runs on upon the subject, that took up the day before, and forms ideas suitable to his inclination : And as solitude was the motive of its being disturbed, he indulges it with the thoughts of company, dreaming that the fame of his station, and happy state of life, was spread about the world ; that it prompted a vast number of people, from all parts, to come to it, which at last induced several princes to claim a right to it ; which being decided by a bloody war, a governor was sent, who laid taxes, demanded duties, raised rents, and warns him to be gone, having fixed upon his habitation for himself to dwell in. Being sadly disturbed, he cries out in his sleep, this is a great punishment for my uneasiness : Could I not be contented with being lord of this island, without provoking heaven to bring me under the power of extorting governors.

There happening a great noise, he starts out of his sleep, with the thought of hearing a proclamation ; and cried out, alas ! 'tis too late to proclaim an evil which is already come : But, being thoroughly awake, and the noise still continuing, he found he had been dreaming, which very much rejoiced him : He therefore puts on his clothes, and hastens to the place he heard the noise come from.

Being within forty or fifty yards thereof, he saw a number of monkeys of two different kinds ; one sort squealing and fighting against the other, without intermixing, but still rallying, as they scattered in the scuffle. He stood some time admiring the order they kept in ; and the battle still continuing as fierce as at first, he advanced to see what they fought about ; for he took notice, they very much strove to keep their ground.

At his approach the battle ceased; and the combatants, retiring at some distance, left the spot of ground, on which they fought, clear: whereon lay a considerable quantity of wild pomegranates which the wind had shook off the trees the night before, and which were the occasion of their strife.

His coming having caused a truce, every one of those creatures keeping still and quiet during his stay, he resolves to use his endeavour to make a solid peace; and as that difference had arisen from the fruit there present, to which he could see no reason but that each kind had an equal right; he divides it into two equal parcels, which he lays opposite to each other, towards both the parties, retiring a little way to see whether this expedient would decide the quarrel: Which answered his intent; those animals quietly coming to that share next to them, and peaceably carrying it away each to their quarters. This occasioned several reflections on the frivolous, and often unjust quarrels that arise among princes, which create such bloody wars, as prove the destruction of vast numbers of their subjects. If monarchs, said he, always acted with as much reason as these creatures, how much blood and money would they save! Thus goes on to his usual place of worship, in order to return thanks, that he was free of that evil, the dream whereof had so tortured his mind; though he confessed he justly deserved the reality; for his uneasiness in the happiest of circumstances.

Having paid his devotion, he takes a walk to see how his peas and beans came on, which he found in a very improving disposition, each stem bearing a vast number of well filled pods. Heaven be praised, said he: I shall eat of this year's crop, and have sufficient to stock my ground the ensuing one.

Thus being plentifully supplied with necessaries, and in a pleasant island, every thing about him being come to perfection; his dwelling, which seems intended by nature for some immortal guest, being, by time, yearly repaired and improved, leaving no room for care; yet the unwise man, as if an enemy to his own ease, cannot be contented with the enjoyment of more than he could reasonably crave, but must disturb his mind with what concerns him not: What pity, said he, so delightful a habitation, attended, with such conveniences, and situated in so whole-
some

some an air, and fruitful a land, should at my death, lose all those wonderful properties, being become useless for want of somebody to enjoy them! What admiration will here be lost for want of beholders! But what kind of man could I settle it upon, worthy of so fine an inheritance? Were it at my pleasure to chuse myself an heir, such only appear virtuous, whose weak nature confides to chastity: Every constitution cannot bear excess: Want of courage occasions mildness, and lack of strength good temper: Thus virtue is made a cloak to infirmity: But why do I thus willingly hamper myself with those cares Providence has been pleased to free me of?

*Leave the miser the knowing care,
Who'll succeed him or be his heir;
That racks his soul with discontent,
Lest what he rak'd for should be spent.
His gold to him is far more dear,
Than all his friends or kindred near.*

Thus he holds the island from Providence: freely he bequeaths it to whom Providence shall think fit to bestow it upon: And, that his heir may the better know the worth of the gift, he draws a map of the whole estate: and made an inventory of every individual tenement, appurtenances, messuages, goods and chattels, and also a draught of the terms and conditions he is to hold the here mentioned possessions upon; viz.

Imprimis, A fair and most pleasant island, richly stocked with fine trees, and adorned with several delightful groves, planted and improved by nature, stored with choice and delicious roots and plants for food, bearing peas and beans; likewise a noble fish-pond, well stocked with divers sorts of curious fish; and a spacious wood, harbouring several sorts of wild-fowl, and beasts, fit for a king's table.

Item, A dwelling commenced by art, improved by nature, and completed by time, which yearly keeps it in repair, as also its furniture.

Item, The offices and appurtenances thereof, with the utensils thereunto belonging; which said island, dwelling, &c.

&c. are freehold, and clear from taxes ; in no temporal dominion, therefore screened from any impositions, duties, and exactions ; defended by nature from invasions or assaults ; guarded and supported by Providence : All which incomparable possessions are to be held upon the following terms, viz.

That whoever shall be by Providence settled in this blessed abode, shall, morning and evening, constantly (unless prevented by ill weather or accident) attend at the east side of this island and within the alcove nature prepared for the lodgement of several harmonious echoes, and there pay his devotion ; singing thanksgiving psalms to the great origin and director of all things, whose praises he will have the comfort to hear repeated by melodious voices.

Next, he shall religiously observe and keep a seventh day for worship only, from the rising of the sun until the going down thereof : Therefore he shall, the day before, make all necessary provision for that day.

That he shall after any tempestuous wind or storm, visit the sea at the outside of the rock, at the east, south, west, and north ends, in order to assist any one in distress.

He shall not be wasteful of any thing whatsoever, especially of any creatures life ; killing no more than what is necessary for his health : But shall every day examine his net, setting at liberty the overplus of his necessity, lest they should perish in their confinement.

He must also keep every thing in the same order and cleanness he shall find them in ; till and manure the ground yearly ; set and sow plants and seeds, fit for food in their proper seasons.

Having written this at the bottom of the map he had drawn, being supper time, he takes his meal ; then goes to his usual evening devotion ; and, after an hour's walk, to his bed, sleeping quietly all night, as being easy in his mind.

The

The next morning he takes his usual walks, and visits his nets: In that he had set for eagles, he found a fowl as big as a turkey, but the colour of a pheasant, only a tail like a partridge: This having no sign of being a bird of prey, he was loth to kill it; but having had no fresh meat for above a week, he yields to his appetite, and dresses it, eating part thereof for his dinner: It was very fat and plump, and eat much like a pheasant, but rather tenderer, and fuller of gravy.

Tho' he was very well pleased with the bird he had taken, yet he would rather it had been one of the eagles which kept his young antelopes in jeopardy; But as he could not destroy them with his net, which had hung a considerable time without the intended success, he projects the prevention of their increase, by destroying their eggs, leaving his nets wholly for the use they had been successful in; and searches the clefts of the rock next to the sea, where those birds commonly build; where having found several nests, he takes away the eggs that were in them, being then their breeding time, and carries them home, in order to empty the shells, and hang them up-and-down in his habitation, among the green leaves which covered the cieling thereof; but having accidentally broke one, and the yolk and white thereof being like that of a turkey, he had the curiosity to boil one, and taste it, which eat much like the manner of a swan's: The rest he saved to eat now and then for a change, reaping a double advantage by robbing these birds; lessening thereby the damage they might do him in time, and adding a dish to his present fare.

In this prosperous way he lived fifteen years, finding no alteration in the weather or seasons, nor meeting in all the time, with any transactions worth of record: still performing his usual exercises, and taking his walks with all the content and satisfaction his happy condition could procure; intirely forsaking all thoughts and desires of ever quitting the blessed station he had then in his possession.

Thus having walked the island over and over (which tho' delightful, yet the frequent repetition of the wonders it produces, renders them, as it were, common, and less admirable) he proceeds to view the sea, whose fluid element being ever in motion, daily affords new objects of admiration.

The day being very fair, and the weather as calm, he sat down upon the rock, taking pleasure in seeing the waves roll, and, as it were, chase one another; the next pursuing the first, on which it rides, when come at; and being itself overtaken by a succeeding, is also mounted on thus, wave upon wave, till come to a bulky body, too heavy for the undermost to bear, sunk all together: This, said he, is a true emblem of ambition; men striving to outdo one another, are often undone.

As he was making reflections on the emptiness of vanity and pride, returning heaven thanks, that he was separated from the world, which abounds in nothing else; a ship appears at a great distance, a sight he had not seen since his shipwreck: unlucky invention! said he, that thou should'st ever come into men's thoughts! the Ark, which gave the first notion of a floating habitation, was ordered for the preservation of man; but its fatal copies daily expose him to destruction. Having therefore returned heaven thanks for his being out of those dangers, he makes a solemn vow, never to return into them again, tho' it were to gain the world; But his resolution proved as brittle, as his nature was frail; the men on board had spied him out with their perspective glasses: and supposing him to be ship-wrecked, and to want relief, sent their long-boat with two men to fetch him away.

At their approach, his heart alters its motion; his blood stops from its common course; his sinews are all stagnated; which intirely unframes his reason, and makes him a stranger to his own inclination; which struggling with his wavering resolution, occasions a debate between hope and fear: But the boat, being come pretty nigh, gave hope the advantage, and his late resolution yields to his revived inclination; which being now encouraged by a probable opportunity of being answered, rushes on to execution. He now, quitting all his former reliance on Providence, depends altogether upon his getting away, blessing the lucky opportunity of seeing his blessed country again, for which pleasure he freely quits and forsakes all the happiness he enjoyed! gladly abandoning his delightful habitation, and plentiful island: He thinks no more of Providence; his mind is entirely taken up with his voyage: But disappointment which often attends the greatest probabilities snatches success out of his hand before he could grasp it, and intercepts his supposedly infal-

libile

lible retreat : The boat could not approach him, by reason of the rocks running a great way into the sea under water ; nor could he come at the boat for sharp points, and deep holes, which made it unfordable, as well as un-navigable ; so that after several hours striving in vain on both sides, to come at one another : the men after they had strove all they could but to no purpose, said something to him in a rage, which he understood not, and went without him, more wretched now, than he was when he was first cast away : His full dependance upon a retreat made him abandon all further reliance on Providence, whom then he could implore ; but now, having ungratefully despised heaven's bounties, which had been so largely bestowed on him, he has forfeited all hopes of assistance from thence, and expects none from the world : Thus destitute, and in the greatest perplexity he cries out, Whither shall I now fly for help ? The world can give me none, and I dare not crave any more from heaven. O cursed delusion ! but rather cursed weakness ! why did I give way to it ? Had I not enough of the world, or was I grown weary of being happy ? So saying, he falls a weeping : Could I shed a flood of tears sufficient to wash away my fault or ease me of the remorse it does create ! But why does my distracted fancy propose impossibilities ? Is not the ocean sufficient to rid me of this wretched life ? Then adieu, infectious world, thou magician of iniquity ! the thoughts of which are now more offensive, than the most nauseous odour of an old sepulchre. Here he was going to cast himself into the sea ; but a vast large monster, rising out of the water, with its terrible jaws quite open, looking at him in a most dreadful manner, stopped the execution of his desperate design : Thus death appearing in a different shape than he had proposed to meet him in, frightens away his resolution of dying : I may, said he, condemn myself ; but vengeance belongs to God alone, who rejects not tears of repentance, but always extends his mercies towards the penitent ; and since St. Peter, after thrice denying his Lord and Master, was by repenting and weeping over his sin received again into favour, I hope these my weak, but sincere tokens of repentance will be accepted of, for ever divorcing myself from the world, and never thinking of its alluring pleasures, but to despise them. And, for the better performance of that pious resolution, he sets that woeful day apart (in

which he was about to commit that fatal deed) for prayer and fasting : Thus he went home, and having eat nothing since the day before, he spent the remainder of that in fasting and praying, singing penitential psalms till dark night, that nature urged him to repose.

The pains and labour he had been at in the day, climbing up and down the rock, dragging himself too and fro, to come at the boat, having very much racked his limbs ; and the disappointment of his full dependance on the late promising success, as also the tormenting remorse, and heavy grief, for his sinful reliance thereon, much fatiguing his mind, rendered sleep, which is ordained for the refreshment of nature, of no manner of help to him: His thoughts are continually disturbed with frightful visions ; all his past dangers glare at him, as if threatening their return ; but that which terrified him most was, the frightful idea of the terrible monster which rose out of the sea at that instant he was going to plunge himself in it.

Being awaked out of his restless sleep, rather more fatigued than when he lay down, having still the terrible aspect of the sea monster in his mind, he made several reflections on the execrable nature of his intended sin ; admiring the immense goodness of Providence, who to deter him from committing of the enormous act, had ordered that (beyond imagination) terrible object, as the most suitable to the barbarity of his design, to strike into him that terror which the species of death he had fixed upon could not. Thus having with tears acknowledged the enormity of his resolution, he returns Providence thanks for its inestimable goodness, who (notwithstanding his late most ungrateful elopement) preserved him from eternal, as well as temporal ruin : Having paid his devotion, and sung a thanksgiving-psalm, he takes a little nourishment, his spirits being low with his past fatigue and fasting ; and as he could not put out of his eyes the terrible aspect of the monster, which was beyond any chimerical conception, he resolves to draw it according to the idea he had in his mind : Perhaps, said he, having often the representation before mine eyes 'twill make the object more familiar and less frightful. Taking therefore pen and ink, and a sheet of parchment, now, said he, how shall I represent what is past imagination to conceive ? A form without likeness, and yet comparable to the most terrible part of every frightful creature ; a large head, resembling that of a lion,

on, bearing three pair of horns ; one pair upright, like that of an antelope ; another pair like a wild goats ; two more bending backwards ; its face armed all round with darts, like a porcupine ; vast great eyes, sparkling like a flint struck with a steel ; its nose like a wild horse, always snarling ; the mouth of a lion, and teeth of a panther ; the fences of an elephant, and the tusks of a wild boar ; shouldered like a giant, with claws like an eagle ; bodied and covered with shells like a rhinoceros, and the colour of a crocodile.

Having likened every different part, he proceeds in the representation thereof ; which being finished, put him in the greatest admiration ! Sure, said he, if nature had a hand in thy making, it was to assemble, in one creature, all the fiercest and dreadfulest animals that are most frightful and terrible : Now, perhaps, this being constantly before me, may come less in my mind. Then fixing it against his wall, this, said he, will be also a memorandum of my late vow, never to endeavour to wish to go from hence, whatever opportunity offers, tho' attended with ever so great a probability of success, and prospect of gain ; fully settling his whole mind and affection on the state and condition heaven has been pleased to place him in ; resolving to let nothing enter into his thoughts, but his most grateful duty to so great a benefactor, who had so often and miraculously rescued him from death.

Thus having intirely banished the world out of his mind, which before often disturbed it, he limits his thoughts within the bounds of his blessed possession, which affords him more than is sufficient to make his life happy ; where plenty flows on him, and pleasure attends his desires ; abounding in all things that can gratify his appetite, or delight his fancy : A herd of delightful antelopes, bounding and playing about his habitation, divert him at home ; and in his walks he is entertained with the harmony of divers kinds of singing birds ; every place he comes at offers him new objects for pleasure : Thus all seems to concur in completing his happiness.

In this most blessed state he thinks himself as Adam before his fall, having no room for wishes, only that every thing may continue in its present condition ; but it cannot be expected, that fair weather which smiles on his beauty, will not change. The sun must go its course, and the seasons take their turn ; which considerations must,

for the present, admit some small care: He is naked, and his tender constitution susceptible of the cold; therefore the clothes he was cast away in being worn out, he is obliged to think of providing something to defend his limbs from the hardfrost of the approaching winter, whilst it is yet warm. Having considered what to make a wrapper of, he concludes upon using some of the same grass he made the mats of, on which he lay, being soft and warm, very fit for that purpose: Of this he cuts down a sufficient quantity, which, when ready to work, he makes small twine with, and plaits it in narrow braids, which he sews together with some of the same, and shapes a long loose gown, that covered him to his heels, and a cap of the same.

By that time he had finished his winter garb, the weather was grown cold enough for him to put it on. The frosty season came on apace, in which there fell such a quantity of snow, that he was forced to make a broom, and sweep it away from about his habitation twice a day; as also the same he made to the places he had occasion to go to, tossing the snow on each side, which before the winter was over, met a-top, and covered it all the way; which obliged him to keep within doors for a considerable time, and melt snow instead of water; lest going for some, he might chance to be buried among the snow.

The winter being over, and the snow dissolved, the gay spring advances apace, offering nature its usual assistance, repairing the damages the late frost had done; which joyful tidings made every thing smile. Quarll, also, finding himself revived, took his former walks, which the preceding bad weather had kept him from, tho' there had been no considerable storm the winter before.

He having a mind to view the sea, and being come to the outside of the north west end of the rock, sees, at the foot thereof, something like part of the body of a large hollow tree, the ends whereof were stopped with its own pitch; and the middle, which was slit open from end to end, and kept gaping by a stick laid across.

This put him in mind of canoes, with which the Indians paddle up and down their lakes and rivers; and being on that side of the rock next to the island of California, he fancied some of them were come to visit this island, tho' not many in number; their canoes holding, at the most, but two men; and, for the generality, one only: Yet as
some

some of these people are accounted great thieves, daily robbing one another, he hastens home to secure what he had ; but it was too late : They had been there already, and had taken away the clothes he found in the chest ; which being, by far, too little for him, hung carelessly on a pin behind his door. Had they been contented with that, he would not have regarded it ; but they carried away some of his curious shells ; and, what grieved him most, the fine bird he had taken such pains to dress and stuff, and care to preserve ; as also his bow and arrows.

Having missed these things, which he much valued, he hastens to the outside of the rock, with his long staff in his hand, in hopes to overtake them before they could get into their canoe ; but happened to go too late, they being already got near half a league from the rock : Yet they did not carry away their theft : for there arising some wind, it made the sea somewhat rough, and overset their canoe ; so that what was in it was all lost but the two Indians, who most dextrously turned it on its bottom again, and with surprising activity leaped into it, one at the one side, and the other at the opposite ; so that the canoe being trimmed at once, they paddled out of sight.

Having seen as much of them as he could, he walks to the north east side, in order to discover the effect of the high wind which happened the night before.

Being come to the outside of the rock, he perceives at a distance something like a large chest, but having no lid on it. Taking that to be the product of some late shipwreck, he grieved at the fatal accident : How long reflected he, will covetousness decoy men to pursue wealth, at the cost of their precious lives ? Has not nature provided every nation and country a sufficiency for its inhabitants ! that they will rove on this most dangerous and boisterous sea, which may be titled Death's Dominions ; many perishing therein, and not one on it being safe.

As he was bewailing their fate, who he imagined had been cast away, he sees two men come down the rock, with each a bundle in his arm, who went to that which he had taken to be a chest ; and, having put their load in it, pushed it away till come to deeper water ; then, having got in it, with a long staff shoved it off, till they could row to a long boat that lay at some distance behind a jetting
part.

part of the rock, which screened it from his sight, as also the ship it belonged to.

The sight of this much amazed him, and made him cease condoling others supposed loss, to run home and examine his own; well knowing those bundles he saw carried away, must needs belong to him; there being no other moveables in the island but what were in his lodge.

Being come home, he finds indeed what he suspected: Those villians had most sacrilegiously rifled and ransacked his habitation, not leaving him so much as one of the mats to keep his poor body from the ground. His winter garb also is gone, and what else they could find for their use.

The loss of those things, which he could not be without, filled him with sorrow: Now, said he, I am in my first state of being; naked I came into the world, and naked I shall go out of it; at which he fell a-weeping.

Having grieved awhile, why, said he, should I thus cast myself down? Is not Providence, who gave me them, able to give me more? Thus having resolved before winter to replenish his loss, he rests himself contented, and gives the ruffians evil actions the best construction he could. Now I think on it, said he, these surely are the men, who, about twelve months since, would charitably have carried me hence, but could not, for want of necessary implements; and now, being better provided, came to accomplish their hospitable design; but, not finding me, supposing I was either dead or gone, took away what was here of no use: Much good may what they have got do them, and may it be of as much use to them as it was to me. Thus walks out, in order to cut grass to dry, and make himself new bedding, and a winter garb.

Having walked about half a mile, he perceives the same men coming towards the pond: Heaven be praised! said he, here they be still. Now when they see I am not gone, nor willing to go, they will return my things, which they are sensible I cannot do without, with these words he goes up to them.

By this time they had caught the two old ducks, which, being pinioned, could not fly away as the rest did. He was much vexed to see the best of his stock thus taken away; yet as he thought they were come to do him service,

he

he could grudge them nothing, that would any wise gratify so good an intent. But having returned them thanks for their good-will, he told them he was happy in the island, and had made a vow never to go out of it.

These being Frenchmen, and of an employment where politeness is of little use, being fishermen, and not understanding what he said, only laughed in his face, and went on to the purpose they came about: Then having as many of the ducks as they could get, they proceeded towards the house where they had seen the antelopes; some of which not running away at their approach, they proposed to catch hold of them.

Being come to the place where they used to feed, which was near the dwelling, the young ones, not being used to see any men in clothes, nor any body but their master, presently fled; but the two old ones, which he had bred up, were so tame, that they stood still; only when the men came to them, they kept close to him, which gave the men an opportunity to lay hold of them; when, notwithstanding Quarll's repeated intreaties, they tied a halter about their horns, and barbarously led them away.

Quarll was grieved to the heart to see his darlings, which he had taken such care to breed up, and which became the principal part of his delight, following him up and down; and which, by their jumping and playing before him, often dispersed melancholy thoughts; notwithstanding all those endearing qualifications, thus haled away, he weeps, and on his knees begs they may be left; and, tho' they understood not his words, his actions were so expressive and moving, that had they had the humanity of canibals, who eat one another, they would have yielded to so melting an object as the poor broken hearted Quarll was; but the inflexible boors went on, cruelly haling and dragging the poor creatures; which, as if sensible of the barbarity of the act, looked back to their afflicted master, as craving his assistance; which at last so exasperated him that he was several times tempted to lay on the ravishers with his long staff; but as often was stopt by the following consideration: Shall I, said he, be the destruction of my fellow-creatures, to rescue out of their hands, animals of which I have an improving store left, and deprive them of their healths, and perhaps of their lives, to recover what cost

me

me nought? Let them go with what they have, and the merit of the deed be their reward. Thus he walks about melancholy, bemoaning his poor antelopes fate, and his misfortune: They were used to liberty, said he, which now they are deprived of, and for which they will pine and die, which, for their sake, I cannot but wish; for life without liberty is a continual death.

As he was walking, thinking (as 'tis usual after the loss of any thing one loves) of the pleasure he had during the enjoyment, the ruffians having secured the poor animals, came back with ropes in their hand. What do they want next? said he, have they not all they desire; would they carry away my habitation also? Sure they have no design on my person: If so, they will not take it so easily as they did my dear antelopes. Thus he resolved to exercise his quarter-staff, if they offered to lay hands on him. The villains whose design was to bind him, and so carry him away, seeing him armed and resolute, did not judge it safe for them to advance within the reach of his weapon, but keep at some distance, divining how to seize him.

Quarll, who, by their consulting, guessed at their design, not thinking proper to let them come to a resolution, makes at the nearest who immediately takes to his heels; and then to the next, who immediately does the same: Thus he follows them about for a considerable time; but they divided in order to tire him with running, till the night approaching, and the wind rising, made them fear their retreat might be dangerous, if they deferred it; so that they went clear away: Which being all he desired, he returned, as soon as he saw them in the long boat, which they rowed to their ship that lay at anchor some distance from the rocks.

Those wretches being gone, he returns heaven thanks for his deliverance; and as his bridge had favoured their coming, he pulls it off, and only laid it over when he had a mind to view the sea, and goes home to eat a bit, having not, as yet, broken his fast. Having, therefore, eaten some of his roots and cheese, and being wearied with hunting those boars, he consults how to lie, his bed and bedding being gone, as also his winter-gown, and the nights being, as yet, cold: However, after a small time of consideration, he concludes to lie in the lodge, which was left vacant by the stolen antelopes absence; whose
litter

litter being made of the same grass as his mats were, he lay both soft and warm.

When laid down, being sorely fatigued, he soon fell asleep; and as the plunderers had the preceding day taken up his cares, they filled his mind in the night; he has them continually before his eyes, sometimes with his beloved antelopes in their pilfering hands; at other times barbarously haling them by the horns with a halter, which they ought to have about their own neck. These acts of austeriety provoking his anger, and urging him on to revenge, he lifts his staff, which on a sudden is turned into Hercules's club: Startled to see that wonderful change, he stops from laying on the intended blow: rescuing, said he, my darling animals, I shall lose my precious and inestimable peace of mind: What can atone for the life of a man? Whilst he was making these reflections, the men got clear away with the fowls and antelopes, leaving him in deep melancholy: Thus, as he was bewailing his loss, calling to mind the agreeable pastimes they had often been to him, and the many anxious hours he had dispersed with their diversion, a gentlewoman appeared before him, of a most agreeable yet grave countenance, dressed in plain dove coloured clothes, in most places thread bare, and in others patched with divers sorts of stuffs, yet genteel and becoming. He starts at her appearing, wondering what she could come for, having nothing more to lose: I come not, said she, to seek ought from thee, but to restore what thou hast lost. He, being overjoyed at the words, looks about, expecting his beloved antelopes, and what else the men had taken away; but, seeing nothing, he thought that vision proceeded from vapours, which the great grief for his late loss had occasioned; and falls a thinking, till he was a second time interrupted by her, bidding him look her in the face. Be satisfied, be satisfied, woman, said he: Why, I neither know thee, nor what thou meanest. Well then, replied she, I'll inform thee of both: I am Patience, whom all the world strives to grieve, and whom none can provoke; and what I promise to restore thee is content, which thou throwest away after worthless things. So she vanishes. At which he awakes.

Having made reflections upon the latter part of his dream, the first part being but a representation of what happened the day before, he makes this application: This, said he, is a check for my discomposing that peace upon
such

such a frivolous account, which by Providence was intended I should enjoy, having supplied me with all necessaries to maintain it: He therefore makes a resolution never to be vexed, let what will happen; but with patience submit to the will of G O D, who has the direction of all things. Then, having paid his usual devotion, he goes into the kitchen, in order to breakfast, and afterwards to take his customary walk. Whilst he was eating, there arose a noise in the air, as proceeding from a quantity of rooks, jackdaws, crows, and such like birds whose common notes he was acquainted with; and as the noise approached he had the curiosity to go and see what was the matter, but was prevented by the coming of a large fowl, which flew over his head as he was going out: He turned back to gaze at the bird, whose beauty seized him with admiration; the pleasure of seeing so charming a creature quite put out of his mind the curiosity of looking from whence proceeded the disagreeable noise without; which ceasing as soon as the bird was sheltered, made him imagine those carrion birds had been chasing that beautiful fowl, which, seeing itself out of danger, stood still, very calm and composed; which gave him the opportunity of making a discussion of every individual agreement which composed so delightful an object: It was about the bigness and form of a swan, almost headed like it, only the bill was not so long, nor so broad, and red like coral; his eyes like those of a hawk, his head of a mazarine-blue, and on the top of it a tuft of shining gold-coloured feathers, which spread over it, hanging near three inches beyond, all round; its breast, face, and part of its neck, milk-white, curiously speckled with small black spots, a gold-coloured circle about it; its back and neck behind of a fine crimson, speckled with purple; its legs and feet the same colour as its bill; its tail long and round, spreading like that of a peacock, composed of six rows of feathers, all of different colours, which made a most delightful mixture.

Having spent several minutes in admiring the bird, he lays peas, and crumbled roots, both roasted and boiled, before it; as also water in a shell, withdrawing, to give it liberty to eat and drink; and stood out peeping to see what it would do: Which, being alone, having looked about, picks a few peas, and drinks heartily; then walks
towards

towards the door, in a composed and easy manner, much like that of a cock.

Quarrl, being at the outside, was dubious whether he should detain him, or let him go; his affection for that admirable creature equally prompts him to both: He cannot bear the thoughts of parting with so lovely an object, nor harbour that of depriving it of its liberty, which it so implicitly intrusted him withal. Thus, after a small pause, generosity prevails over self-pleasure: Why should I, said he, make the place of its refuge its prison? He therefore makes room for it to go, which, with a slow pace, walks out; and having looked about a small time, mounts up a considerable height, and then takes its course north-west.

The bird being gone out of sight, he made reflections on the adventure, which he judges to be a prognostic of some rebellion or revolution in Europe: Whereupon, having recommended his native country to the protection of heaven, begging a continuation of peace, and an end of those unhappy divisions, which often prove the ruin of nations; he goes and sets down in the memorial-book, the transactions of that year, being 1689, and the 15th since his being in the island, which proved more fruitful in events than any of the preceding. The picture which he had drawn of the terrible sea-monster, being against his wall, having accustomed himself to the frightful object that constantly disturbed his mind, he draws that of the two ruffians, committing their barbarity, and hangs it by the place: the idea whereof being to him more terrible than the preceding, he could not suffer it to be long in his sight; but takes it down, and draws on the backside of it, the villains on a gibbet: Now, said he, this being what ought to be the end and explanation of the history, shall now be the right side of the picture.

There happening nothing the remainder of the year, worthy of record, he employs it in his customary occupations; as pruning and watering his lodge and dairy, making his mats to lie on, as also his winter-garb; every day milking his antelopes and goats; making now-and-then butter and cheese, attending his nets, and such-like necessary employments.

The mean time, the French mariners, who, probably, got money by what they had taken from him the year before, returned, it being much about the same season; and

being resolved to take him away, and all they could make any thing of, out of the island, were provided with hands and implements to accomplish their design; as ropes to bind what they could get alive, and guns to shoot what they could not come at, saws and hatchets to cut down log-wood and brazil, pick-axes and shovels to dig up orris-roots, and others of worth, which they imagined the island produced; likewise flat-bottomed boats to tow in shallow water, where others could not come; and thus by degrees to load their ship with booty: But ever watchful Providence blasted their evil projects, and confounded their devices at the very instant they thought themselves sure of success: The implements in a flat bottomed boat were towed to the very foot of the rock, by a young fellow, who being lighter than a man, was thought fittest to go with the tools, which pretty well loaded the boat.

Their materials being landed, to their great satisfaction, the men on board embarked in two more of the same sort of boats; but were no sooner in them, but a storm arose, which dashed their slender bottom to pieces, and washed them into the sea, in which they perished, over-setting also the flat bottomed boat on shore, with the load and the lad underneath it.

The storm being over, which lasted from about eight in the morning till almost twelve at noon, Phil. according to his custom, went to see if he could perceive any damage done by the late tempest, and if any, distressed by it, stood in want of help.

Being at the side of the rock he used to visit, he could see nothing but a few fishes and shells the sea had left in the clefts: If this, said he, be all the damage that has been done, make me thankful; it will recruit me with fresh fish and utensils. Going to the N. W. part, where he sees a battered boat floating with the keel upwards, this, said he, bodes some mischief; but thought it not to be of any consequence. Having gone about fifty yards further he spies a small barrel at the foot of the rock, with several planks and fragments of a ship, floating with the tide: Alas! said he, these are too evident proofs of a shipwreck, to hope otherwise. As he was looking about, he hears a voice cry out, much like that of a man, at some distance, behind a part of the rock: Being advanced a small matter beyond where he was, heaven be praised there

there is somebody, whom I am luckily come to save, and he most fortunately come to be my companion: I cannot but rejoice at the event, though I heartily grieve for the accident. Hastening to the place where he thought the cries came from, which, as he advanced, he could discern to be too shrill for a man's voice, certainly, said he, this must be some woman by the noise. This set his blood a glowing; his heart alters its motion: Now, said he, joyful providence has completed my happiness: I shall have a companion, and a help mate; and goes on with fresh vigour as though he had recovered his strength and got new limbs: The rough and savage rock, which was before, in a manner inaccessible, is now made easy to walk: He climbs the highest places with activity, and goes down the steep as nimbly; and soon arrived where he judged the person to be: Yet, seeing nothing, but what he took to be a chest, began to be disheartened: Sure, said he, this is not a second illusion, to decoy my fancy after what is not to be had! Thus his joy on a sudden turned into a deep melancholy; but the creature underneath, who, having heard some noise near at hand, ceased crying, to listen; yet, seeing nobody come, cries out again somewhat louder than before.

This revived him quite, and recalls his hopes: It is a woman, said he, and in that chest; when, going to break it open, he stops on a sudden: What am I going to do? How do I know the cause of her being thus locked up? Though women are, in a manner, become a merchandize, yet they never are packed up, or chested: She must be in there for a punishment, which in some countries is inflicted on witches. The boy, who heard a voice, calls out in French, which Quarll not understanding, he was afraid to let it out; but his mentioning Christ being intelligible to him, made him change his opinion: For Christ's sake, doth she say! That holy name witches seldom make use of; however in that name I'll let her out. If she be under condemnation, was I not so? Had she by heaven been decreed to die, she would not have been here. At which words, with his staff he endeavoured to break that which he took to be the lid of the chest, but proved the bottom; and, as he was striking, the boy underneath calling to him to turn it up, thrust his hand under the side, which he perceiving, though he understood him not, stood still: Finding his mistake, this, said he, is a flat bottomed

bottomed boat, such as the Frenchmen used the year before, when they came and plundered me : Now am I safe, if I turn it up ? Doubtless they are come in great numbers. Pausing awhile, and the lad still continuing his moan, he was moved to compassion ; and having considered the boat could not hold any great number he ventures : Let what will come on it, or who will be under, for the poor woman's sake I'll relieve them, there cannot be many men. However, I'll let but one out at a time : If he be mischievous, I am able to deal with him. At this, he puts the end of the staff where he had seen the hand, and lifts it about a foot from the ground : Out of the opening immediately creeps the boy, who on his knees immediately falls a begging and weeping, expecting death every moment, as being the merited punishment for the evil purpose he came about. Quarll, who expected there was a woman besides, fearing the gap the youth came out would be too uneasy for her to come out through, made motions for the boy to help him, in order to set the boat on its bottom ; which he did. Quarll, seeing the implements, instead of the woman, was as much vexed as disappointed : His countenance changes ; sometimes he looks at the things, and then at the boy ; who, seeing him appear angry, thought of nothing but present death, and again falls on his knees, holding up his hands, almost drowned in tears, begging for mercy in such a moving manner, that Quarll could not forbear shedding some tears ; and though the late disappointment of his proposed happiness, and the sight of the preparations made for his intended ruin had moved him to anger against that mercenary nation ; he helps the young fellow up by the hand ; and the night coming on apace, he takes one of the hatchets that lay by, and gave another to the boy, then falls a knocking the boat to pieces, and directed him to do the same ; which he accordingly did.

The boat being demolished, they carried the boards up higher on the rock, as also the rest of the things : lest, in the night, some storm should rise, which might wash them back into the sea ; it being then too late to bring them away. Having done, each of them took up what they could carry, and so went home. The young Frenchman, finding a kinder treatment, than either he deserved or expected, was extraordinary submissive and tractable ; which made Phil, the more kind and mild ; and instead
of

of condemning his evil attempt, he commiserated his misfortune, and in room of resentment shewed him kindness: Thus, having given him of what he had to eat, he puts him to bed in his lodge, wherein he lay, till he had got his mats made up; then went to bed himself, but could not sleep for thinking on his late disappointment, which intercepted those pleasures he so much depended on, thinking himself sure of a female partner, who in sharing happiness with him, would have much added to his bliss.

Having tossed and tumbled a considerable time, he begins to grow heavy spirited; nature is fatigued and must be refreshed: Thus he falls asleep; and, as his hopes the preceding day had indulged his desire, his mind is so impressed in the night with the idea of a female object, that he dreams he has her by his side, condoling her for the dangers she has gone through, congratulating her lucky escape, and greeting her happy arrival into so blessed an abode.

Thus expressing his joy, in possessing the only object which could complete his happiness, with all the softness and eloquence the most passionate love can impress, he reaches out his arms to embrace the lovely phantom his inclination had bred in his imagination; but, having groped awhile, and finding nothing, he starts out of his sleep at this most shocking disappointment.

Being awaked, the late delusive pleasure, called to his mind the real, which he had formerly enjoyed, and which he did then hanker after: What is man, said he, without that part of himself, out of which God made him a mate? Adam, though possessing all the world, was still wanting till he had a woman to keep him company: In this melancholy disposition he again falls asleep, and dreams afresh; in which his imagination gluts his inclination with those pleasures it so much desired: Fruition to him, is but liquor to a man sick of a violent fever, which only for a minute quenches his heat, but augments the distemper, and at last destroys the patient: Excessive love is but short lived; what is violent is not lasting: time with pleasure runs fast away, but dwells long with sorrow; cares weaken love, and indifference breed discontent; the jarrings follow, which introduce division, the mother of poverty.

These

These dismal accidents, incumbent to inconsiderate love, coming into the amorous dreamer's mind, his great heat being quenched, he took time to consider his condition; and seeing himself liable to them, is struck with such a fear as blots all pleasures out of his thoughts, and fills them with dread of future cares, which he unadvisedly run himself into, and all for the sake of a short pleasure.

Starting out of his sleep at the approach of those sad troubles, he returns heaven thanks, that it was but a dream; and begs pardon for having given so much way to the concupiscence of flesh; getting up, though sooner than ordinary, lest he should fall asleep, and dream again of women.

Having walked about till he thought it time for the boy to rise, he calls him up, and takes him to the place that he usually went every morning and evening to sing psalms; where the youth being come, and hearing so many different voices, and seeing no body, was scared out of his wits, and took to his heels, making towards the rock as fast as he could: But as he was not acquainted with the easiest and most practicable parts thereof, Phil. had made an end of his psalm, and overtook him before he got to the sea-side, into which he would have cast himself, at the fright; but Quarll, who by the boy's starting, guessed his disorder, not having the benefit of the language, endeavoured to calm him by his pleasing countenance, and prevented his drowning himself; but could not keep off a violent fit the fright had occasioned, which held him several minutes.

The fit being over, he and the boy took away at divers times, the remains of the chest, and of what was in it, which they could not carry home the day before: Then taking up two guns, now, said he, these unlucky instruments, which were intended for destruction, shall be employed for the preservation of that they were to destroy, taking them to his lodge, he sets them at each side of the door; then being dinner time he strikes a light, and sets the boy to make a fire, whilst he made some of the fish to fry, which he picked up upon the rock the evening before; then takes dripping he saved when he roasted any flesh, to fry with them. The boy, who had lived some time in Holland, where they used much butter, seeing dripping employed in room thereof, thought to please his master in

in making some; and as he had seen milk and cream in the dairy arbour, wanting a churn only, there being a small rundlet lying by empty, he takes one of the ends of it, in which, the next day, he beat butter.

Phil. seeing the youth industrious, begins to fancy him notwithstanding the aversion he had conceived for his nation, ever since the ill-treatment he had received from his countrymen; and, as speech is one of the most necessary faculties to breed and maintain fellowship, he took pains to teach him English.

The lad, being acute and ingenious, was soon made to understand it, and in six months capable to speak it sufficiently, so as to give his master a relation of his late coming, and to what intent. The men, said he, who about one year since carried away from hence some antelopes, with extraordinary ducks, and several rarities, which they said belonged to a monstrous English hermit, whose hair and beard covered all his body, having got a great deal of money by shewing them, encouraged others to come; whereupon several, joining together, hired a ship to fetch away the hermit, and what else they could find: therefore brought with them tools, and guns, to shoot what they could not take alive. Barbarous wretches! replied he, to kill my dear antelopes and ducks! Pray, what did they intend to do with me? Why, said the boy, to make a show of you. To make a show of me! Sordid wretches! Is a christian then such a rarity amongst them? Well, and what were the saws and hatchets for? To cut down your house, which they intended to make a drinking-booth of. Ho, monstrous! what time and nature has been fifteen years a completing, they would have ruined in a moment: Well, thanks to Providence, their evil design is averted. Pray, what is become of those sacrilegious persons? They are all drowned, said the boy. Then, replies he, the heavens are satisfied, and I avenged: But how camest thou to escape? for thou wast with them. No, replied the youth, I was upon the rock when their boat was dashed against it, and was overfet with the same sea, under the flat-bottomed boat, where you found me. That was a happy overfet for thee. Well, is there no gratitude due to Providence for thy escape? Due to Providence! said he, why, I thought you had saved me: Yes, replied Quarll; but I was sent by Providence for that purpose. That was kindly done too, said the boy:

Well,

Well, when I see him, I will thank him: Doth he live hereabout: Poor ignorant creature! replied Phil. why Providence is every where: What! didst thou never hear of Providence? What religion art thou? Religion! answered the youth: I don't know what you mean: I am a fisherman by trade, which my father lived by. Well, said Quarll, did he teach thee no prayers? Prayers! replied the lad: Why, fishermen have no time to pray; that's for them who have nothing else to do: Poor folk's must work, and get money; that's the way of our town. Covetous wretches! Well, said he, I grudge them not what they possess, since it is all the happiness they aspire at; but thou shalt learn to pray, which will be of far more advantage to thee than work, both here and hereafter: From which time he begins to teach him the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments; as also the principles of the christian religion; all which instructions the youth taking readily, won his affections the more: He likewise taught him to sing psalms, which farther qualified him to be his companion in spiritual exercises, as well as in temporal occupations.

Now, having company, he is obliged to enlarge his bed, the lodge being wanting for his antelopes against breeding time: He adds, therefore, to his mat. His other provisions also wanting to be augmented, and he having both tools and boards, out of the flat boat which he had taken to pieces! he and the lad went about making large boxes to salt flesh and fish in; then, with the boards that were left, they made a table for his dwelling that he had before, and one for his kitchen; as also shelves in the room of those that were made of wicker: Then, having recruited his shell utensils, that were stolen the year before, he was completely furnished with all manner of conveniences; and, providence supplying him daily with other necessaries, there was no room left him for wishes, but for thanksgiving, which they daily and most religiously paid.

In this most happy state they lived in peace and concord the space of ten years, unanimously doing what was to be done, as it lay in each of their ways, without relying on one another.

Quarll, who before, though alone and deprived of society (the principal comfort of life) thought himself blessed, now cannot express his happiness, there being none
in

in the world to be compared to it, heartily praying he might find no alteration until death : But the young man, not having met with so many disappointments in the world as he, had not quite withdrawn his affections from it ; his mind will sometimes run upon his native country, where he has left his relations, and where he cannot help wishing to be himself : Thus, opportunity offering itself one day, as he went to get oysters, to make sauce for some fresh cod fish which Phil. was dressing, he saw, at a distance, a ship ; at which his heart fell a panting ; his pulses double their motion ; his blood grows warmer and warmer, till at last, inflamed with desire of getting at it, he lays down the bag he brought to put the oysters in, as also the instrument to dredge them up with, and takes to swimming. The men on board, having spied him out, sent their boat to take him up ; so he went away without taking his leave from him he had received so much good from : who, having waited a considerable time, fearing some accident had befallen him, leaves his cooking, and goes to see for him ; and, being come at the place where he was to get the oysters, he sees the bags and instrument lie, and nobody with them. Having called several times without being answered, various racking fears tortured his mind : Sometimes he doubts he is fallen in some hole in the rock, there being many near that place where the oysters were : He therefore with his staff, which he always carried with him when he went abroad, at the other side of the rock grappled in every one round the place ; and, feeling nothing, he concludes some sea-monster had stolen him away, and, weeping, condemns himself as the cause of this fatal accident ; resolving, for the future, to punish himself by denying his appetite ; and only eat to support nature, and not to please his palate.

Having given over hopes of getting him again, he returns home in the greatest of afflictions, resolving to fast till that time the next day ; but, happening to look westward, in which was the point the wind stood he perceives something like a boat at a great distance : wiping the tears off his eyes, and looking stedfastly, he discovers a sail beyond it, which quite altered the motive of his former fear : No monster, said he, hath devoured him ; 'tis too plain a case, that he has villainously left me : But what could I expect of his son, who had projected such evil against me ? So saying, he went home, and made an

end

end of dressing his dinner ; and afterwards hangs up the picture which he had taken down upon his account, being the emblem of what he deserved ; resting himself contented, being but as he was before, and rather better ; since he had more conveniences, and tools to till his ground, and dig up his roots with. Having recommended himself to Providence, he resumes his usual works and recreations, resolving that no cares should mar his happiness for the future, being out of all these irresistible temptations way, in which the world abounds, and daily lays the best men's hopes in the dust.

Being alone again, the whole business of the house lies upon his hands ; he now must prune and trim his habitation, that daily harbours him, being made of fine growing plants, which yearly shoot out young branches : This makes them grow out of shape. He must also till the ground ; set and gather his peas and beans in their season ; milk and feed his antelopes daily ; make butter and cheese at proper times ; dig up his roots ; fetch in fuel and water, when wanted attend his nets ; go eagle-nesting ; and every day dress his own victuals : All which necessary occupations, besides the time dedicated for morning and evening devotions, kept him wholly employed ; which made his renewed solitude less irksome. And, having walking all that afternoon to divert his thoughts, admiring all the way the surprising works of nature both in the surprising rocks which surrounded the island, and in the delightful creatures, and admirable plants, that are in it ; being weary with walking, he returns home, thanking kind Providence for settling him in so blessed a place, and in his way calls at his invisible choir ; where, having sung a thanksgiving psalm, and his usual evening hymn, he goes to supper, and then to bed, with a thoroughly contented mind ; which occasions pleasant dreams, to entertain his thoughts.

During his sleep, his fancy is delighted with being in nature's garden of pleasure, where none but her friends are permitted to enter.

The place appeared very spacious, and of admirable form ; full of all sorts of nature's works, both animals, vegetables, and minerals, every individual thing in perfection : And though some were distant, yet all appeared as at hand.

The lofty tress, which stood on level ground, covered
with

with curious grass, embalmed with many different coloured flowers, exceeding in beauty any carpet that the most expert artist could make, spread their branchy arms over creatures of all kinds, which lay beneath their delightful shades: There the bold lion lies by the innocent lamb; the fierce panther near the harmless sheep; the ravenous wolf with the mild goat; leopard and deer, tyger and hare, reposed together in peace; on the trees, eagles, vultures, falcons and hawks, quietly perched with the turtle and the dove.

These most agreeable objects, joined with the delightful noise of the fountains falling into their basins, and the purling streams running their course, together with the various harmonious notes of divers kinds of singing birds, put him into an extacy: Sure, said he, this is the garden of Eden, out of which unfortunate Adam was cast after his fall, as being a dwelling only for innocence.

Having walked a little way, there being on every side curious lanes, every one affording new objects of admiration, he comes to a walk, edged with orange and lemon-trees, full of fruit and blossoms, at the foot of which was a narrow bank bordered with jonquils, tuberoses, iacinths, and other delightful flowers, both for sight and smell: At the end of it there was an arbour of the same, but so beautiful, that at first sight he took it for a tapestry the most expert artist had exerted himself in making, to shew the curiosity of trade, and greatness of his skill: In it there sat three ladies of uncommon beauty, the middlemost, who was the lusiest, appeared to be the eldest, being of a most sedate countenance, a moderate number of years having both established her judgment, and settled her features: She, at her right hand, seemed to be of a weaker constitution; she had in her hand an olive branch bearing fruit, which, when gathered, was immediately succeeded with blossoms; so that it never was without the one or the other: The lady who sat on the left side was more jolly and gay, yet looked somewhat careful: She had in her hand a long vessel broad at one end, and sharp at the other, like a horn, bending towards the point, full of all sorts of fruits.

Having stood still a short space, looking at those ladies, thinking it ill manners to interrupt their conversation; they, perceiving his modesty would not permit him to advance, rose up, and went another way, to give him the opportunity of viewing the garden: He accordingly went quite

quite round, till come to the place where he had begun his walk ; where he saw a stately cock of an extraordinary size, strutting from animal to animal, taking from most of them something whilst they were asleep ; which having secured, he falls a crowing in such a loud manner, that he startled all the other creatures ; which, being awake, and every one missing something challenged him with it: But he, having crowed a second time in an insulting and daring manner, strutted most haughtily away ; at which the losers, being much offended, consulted together on means to retake by force, what he had in so clandestine a manner taken from them ; chusing the lion for their director : But the watchful cock, which, whilst they were indulging themselves, carefully made sufficient provision to maintain what he had done, bid them all defiance.

There happening a great noise of squeeling, it waked him out of his dream ; and his mind being impressed with notions of war, it at first seized him with terror : But being somewhat settled, and the noise still continuing, he perceived it proceeded from the two different kinds of monkeys in the island, which were fighting for the wild pomgranates that the high winds had shook off the trees the preceding night, which was very boisterous.

Having guessed the occasion of the debate, he gets up, in order to go and quell their difference, by dividing amongst them the cause thereof : Getting up, he opens the door, at the outside of which, an old monkey of each sort were quietly waiting his levee, to intice him to come, as he once before did, and put an end to their bloody war.

He was not a little surprised to see two such inveterate enemies, who at other times never meet without fighting, at that juncture agree so well.

That most surprising sign of reason in those brutes, which, knowing his decision would compose their comrades difference, came to implore it, put him upon these reflections : Would princes, said he, be but reasonable, as those which by nature are irrational, how much blood and money would be saved ! Having admired the uneasiness of those poor creatures, which still went a few steps forward, and then backward to him ; he was in hopes to decoy one or both into his lodge, by throwing meat to them : But those exemplary animals, hearing their fellows in trouble, had no regard to their separate interest, taking no notice of what he gave them ; but kept moving to and-
again

again with all the tokens of uneasiness they could express : Which so moved him, that he hastened to the place; where his presence caused immediately a cessation of arms, and each party moved a considerable distance off each other, waiting his sharing the wind-falls; which being done, they quietly took that heap which lay next each kind, and went to their different quarters.

This accident, which in some manner made out his dream of wars, brought it also fresh into his mind, which was full of cares about his country, which he much feared, if any should happen in Europe would be involved therein, and calling to remembrance the indigent disposition he left it in, he feared it would lay it open to some usurping prince's power : But lest farther speculation should occasion evil prognostication to disturb his peace, he leaves the event of all things to the direction of Providence, and goes home to set down his dream, and the year he dreamed it, which was in 1690.

Fourteen years more being past, every thing keeping its natural course, their happened nothing extraordinary, each succeeding year renewing the pleasures the preceding had produced : Thunders and high winds being frequent, though not equally violent, he thought it not material to record them, or their effects; as blowing and throwing fishes, shells, empty vessels, battered cheits, &c. upon the rock : only transactions and events wonderful and uncommon : And there happened a most surprising one a few days after, which though of no great moment, is as worthy of record as any of far greater concern ; being a wonderful effect of Providence, manifested in a miraculous manner, though not to be said supernatural.

One morning, when he had roasted a parcel of those roots which he used to eat instead of bread, and this he commonly did once a week, it eating best when stale ; having spread them on his table and chest to cool, he went out to walk, leaving his door open to let the air in.

His walk, though graced with all the agreeables nature could adorn it with, to make it delightful ; a grass carpet, embroidered with beautiful flowers, of many different colours and smells, under his feet, to tread on ; before, and on each side of him, fine lofty trees of various forms and heights, clothed with pleasant green leaves, trimmed with rich blossoms of many colours, to divert

R

his

his eye ; a number of various sorts of melodious singing birds perching in their most lovely shades, as though nature had studied to excel man's brightest imagination, and exquisiteness of art : Yet all these profusenesses of nature's wonders are not sufficient to keep away or expel anxious thoughts from his mind. It runs upon his dear antelopes the darling heads of his present flock, which he took such care to bring up, and were become so engaging, always attending him in those fine walks ; adding, by their swift races, active leapings, and other uncommon diversions to the natural pleasantness of the place ; which now, by their most lamented absence, is become a dull memorandum of the barbarous manner in which they were ravished away from him.

In these melancholy thoughts, which his lonesomeness every now-and-then created, he returns home, where Providence had left a remedy for his grievance : A companion, far exceeding any he ever had, waits his return ; which was a beautiful monkey of the finest kind, and the most complete of the sort, as tho' made to manifest the unparalleled skill of nature, is sent him by Providence, to dissipate his melancholy.

Being come to his lodge, and beholding that wonderful creature, and in his own possession, at the farthest end of it, and him at the entrance thereof to oppose its flight, if offered, he is at once filled with joy and admiration : Long, said he, I endeavoured to get one, and would have been glad of any, though of the worst kind, and even the meanest of the sort ; and here kind Providence has sent me one of an unparalleled beauty.

Having a considerable time admired the beast, which all the while stood unconcerned, now-and-then eating of the roots that lay before him, he shuts the door, and goes in with a resolution of staying within all day, in order to tame him, which he hoped would be no difficult matter, his disposition being already pretty familiar, little thinking that Providence, who sent him thither, had already qualified him for the commission he bore : which having found out by the creature's surprising docility, he returns his benefactor his most hearty thanks for that miraculous gift.

This most wonderful animal having by its surprising tractability and good nature, joined to its matchless handsomeness, gained its master's love, beyond what is usual

to

to place on any sort of beasts ; he thought himself doubly recompensed for all his former losses, especially for that of his late ungrateful companion, who notwithstanding all the obligations he held from him, basely left him, at a time he might be most helpful : And, as he fancied his dear Beaufidelle (for so he called that admirable creature) had some sort of resemblance to the picture he framed of him, he takes it down thinking it unjust to bear in his sight that vile object which could not in any-wise claim a likeness to so worthy a creature as his beloved monkey.

One day, as this lovely animal was officiating the charge it had of its own accord taken, being gone for wood, as wont to do when wanted, he finds in his way a wild pomgranate, whose extraordinary size and weight had caused it to fall off the tree : He takes it home, and then returns for his fagot ; in which time Quarll, withing the goodness of the inside might answer its outward beauty, cuts it open ; and, finding it of a dull lusciousness ; too flat for eating, imagined it might be used with things of an acid and sharp taste : Having therefore boiled some water, he puts it into a vessel, with a sort of an herb which is of the taste and nature of cresses, and some of the pomegranate, letting them infuse some time, now-and-then stirring it : which the monkey having taken notice of, did the same : But one very hot day, happening to lay the vessel in the sun, made it sour.

Phil. who very much wanted vinegar in his fauces, was well pleased with the accident, and so continued the souring of the liquor, which proving excellent, he made a five-gallon vessel of it ; having several, which at times he found upon the rock.

Having now store of vinegar, and being a great lover of pickles, which he had learnt to make by seeing his last wife, who was an extraordinary cook, and made of all sorts every year : calling to mind he had often in his walks seen something like mushrooms, he makes it his business to look for some : Thus he picked up a few, of which Beaufidelle, who followed him up and down) having taken notice, immediately ranges about ; and being nimbler-footed than his master, and not obliged to stoop so low, picked double the quantity in the same space of time ; so that he soon had enough to serve him till the next season.

His good success in making that sort of pickle, encourages him to try another; and, having taken notice of a plant in the wood that bears a small green flower, which, before it is blown, looks like a caper, he gathers a few; and, their taste and flavour being no way disagreeable, judging that when pickled they would be pleasant, he tries them, which, according to his mind, were full as good as the real ones, and gathers a sufficient quantity, with the help of his attendant; stocking himself with two as pleasant pickles as different sorts: But there is another which he admires above all: None, to his mind, like the cucumber; and the island producing none, left him no room to hope for any; yet (as likeness is a vast help to imagination) if he could but find any thing, which ever so little resembles them in make, nature or taste, it will please his fancy: He therefore examines every kind of buds, blossoms, and seeds; having at last found that of a wild parsnep, which being long and narrow, almost the bigness and make of a pickling cucumber, green and crisp withal, full of a small flat seed, not unlike that of the thing he would fain have it to be, he pickles some of them; which being of a colour, and near-upon the make, he fancies them quite of the taste.

His beans being at that time large enough for the first crop, he gathers some for his dinner: The shells being tender and of a delicate green, it came into his mind, they might be made to imitate French beans: They are, said he, near the nature, I can make them quite of the shape, so be they have the same flavour. Accordingly, he cuts them in long narrow slips, and pickles some: the other part he boils; and there being none to contradict their taste, they passed current, for as good French beans as any that ever grew.

The disappointment of having something more comfortable than water to drink being retrieved by producing, in the room thereof, wherewithal to make his eatables more delicious, he proceeds in his first project; and, taking necessary care to prevent that accident which intercepted success in his first undertaking, he accomplishes his design, and makes a liquor no-wise inferior to the best cyder: So that now he has both to revive and keep up his spirits, as well as to please his palate, and suit his appetite.

Having now nothing to crave or wish for, but rather
all

all motives for content, he lies down with a peaceable mind, no care or fear disturbing his thoughts ; His sleep is not interrupted with frightful fancies, but rather diverted with pleasant and diverting dreams ; he is not startled at thunder or storms, though ever so terrible, his trust being on Providence, who at sundry times, and in various manners has rescued him from death, though apparently unavoidable ; being for above thirty years miraculously protected and maintained in a place so remote from all human help and assistance.

Yet, notwithstanding his firmness, and whole trust on Providence, he is obliged to give way to the weakness of his nature ; a strange and shocking noise is heard at a distance in the air, which, having reached the place where he stood, covers it with darkness for several minutes ; at which he is so alarmed, that he thinks himself past all hopes ; till the noise being ceased, and that which intercepted the light dispersed, his scared senses returning to their proper seat, and his strayed reason recalled, he is ashamed of the weakness of his faith, and begs pardon for his late mistrust of the continuation of Providence's protection, who had all along given him all imaginable reason to depend upon it at all times : Thus, having opened his door, he steps out to see if he could discover the cause of the late most surprising and sudden darkness, in a bright sun shining-day ; which having found out by the vast number of dead birds of several kinds, lying up and down the ground, he was seized with no small amazement, though with less fear.

From that most surprising aspect he infers, there had been a battle of those creatures in the air, the great number of which had occasioned the late decrease.

Having made reflections upon that astonishing transaction, he can draw from thence no other inference, but a prognostication of dreadful wars in Europe, from which he begs heaven to protect his native country : And lest the dead birds, that lay in great numbers, should (with lying) infect the island, he and his monkey carried them to the other side of the rock, throwing them into the sea ; only as many of them as had soft feathers on their breast and bellies, he plucked away, to stuff a pillow for the beast, being a little too hot at night for it to lie upon the bed. So having cleared the place, and being tired with often going up and down the rugged rock, he stayed at

home the remainder of the day, and at night goes to bed ; but, as the late omen of approaching evil had pre-occupied his thoughts in the day with cares concerning his country, his mind ran upon it in the night, dreaming he sees wives weeping, and melting into tears, taking their leaves of their indulgent husbands, hanging destitute of strength, about their necks, whose grief weighed them to the ground. Turning from that afflicting object, he sees another as flocking ; the old father bathed in tears, embracing his only son, bidding him farewell, and, with him, all the comforts of this life, and support of his age. Moving his eyes from that, they light on full as bad a sight ; the tender mother swooning in her dear child's arms, whom an inexorable press gang is haling away. Thus every face expressing grief for a relation, or a friend, not being able any longer to behold those terrifying objects, with which the town abounded, he betakes himself to the country ; that by keeping from the afflicted, he may avoid grief.

Having quitted the town, he finds himself, on a sudden in a place as full of terrors, where he saw streams of reeking blood here and there ; loose horses kicking and prancing about ; some dragging their late riders by the stirrups ; others wounded, and their guts hanging about ; at a distance, crowds of men in flame and smoke, confusedly moving like heaps of dust in a whirlwind, leaving behind them, as they moved, vast numbers of men and horses, both dead and dying ; some without legs, others without arms, and abundance with but one of each.

At a distance from thence, some in pursuit of their enemies, hacking and cutting them down all the way before them like wood for fuel ; others flying from being slain, cast themselves into rapid rivers, where they perish by thousands.

As he was looking at those terrible objects he finds himself on a sudden surrounded by rustical soldiers, holding their swords and bayonets to his breast, and asking him, in a surly manner, whether High or Low ! at which being very much startled, not knowing what to answer, nor, indeed, what they meant, he told them, he was an Englishman ; which they appearing to be also, made him hope for better usage : But they seizing him in a violent manner, said he might be English, and yet an enemy to the
the

the country. Then he awaked, in a wonderful fright; but, being come to himself, he concludes, that his dream proceeded from his late surprize at the preceding day's astonishing transactions: Therefore, having again recommended his country to heaven's protection, he goes about making the bed for his monkey, as he had concluded on before, and with some sail cloth makes a case, stuffing it with the feathers he had saved for that purpose.

The night being come, he lays the couching, which he made for the beast, by his own bed; which very readily went to it, being very soft and easy.

And, as cares for his country had in the day occupied his thoughts, his mind in the night is impressed with the subject, though not with so dismal an idea as the preceding; having since been diverted with such objects as removed the terrifying aspects, which before offered themselves to his imagination; which now is taken with being in St. James's Park, where he had formerly taken pleasure, and which he fancies had since lost many of its former agreeablenesses.

As he was walking, a report was raised, that a certain great person (who, by his late great services to the nation, had gained a title to the palace) was just deceased; having before his death, entailed the same upon a foreign prince of great renown: This surprizing piece of news occasioned a sudden alteration in every bodies countenance: Some looked pale with grief, others red with wrath; but every thing in nature seemed to express a feeling for the loss; the trees shed half their virtues and the grass withered.

This dull scene having lasted some small time, the trees and grass recover their former verdure, brighter than before; the lofty oaks, which he fancied bordered the Mall, bore fine roses in vast number.

This additional beauty in those noble plants, already so famed abroad for their toughness and strength, prompts people of all nations to come and refresh themselves under their lofty and fragrant shades.

Having with great satisfaction admired the surprizing improvement of the oaks, which, to his imagination, prognosticated prosperity to the nation, he walks on northward, where he saw abundance of thistles, which made him wonder they were permitted to grow in a place where every thing ought to contribute to its agreeableness
and

and pleasantness; but, having considered the stoutness of the plants, which denoted their being well rooted, he judged it impossible to clear the ground: Besides the bees loving to settle on them, and probably sucking more honey from their blossoms than any more agreeable or sweet scented flowers; for that reason he imagined they were not gathered.

Walking back again, he meets with several noblemen, some with a blue cordoon, others with green, each with a garden tool in his hand, going to turn up and till the ground, between that where the thistles grew and that where the oaks stood: He was startled to see those great persons, who hardly will concern themselves with their own lands and possessions, labour to improve that wherein every private person had a share. He stood some time admiring their dexterity, and readiness at their work; then walks on to the Mall, which he found thronged with a multitude of people of all nations, every one having a rose in his hand, wherewith they diverted themselves as they walked.

Having gazed about him a considerable time, he had a fancy to go and see how the noble gardeners went on with their work; where, being come, he finds to his great admiration, the ground had been so wonderfully well manured, that the oaks and thistles had struck their roots through it, and met; so, growing together, had produced a plant which bore both roses and thistles, to every-body's wonder; which made the thistles so valued ever since, that there are but few great or fine gardens, which have not more or less of them.

His monkey, being startled out of his sleep in a mighty fright, ran behind his back squeaking, and awaked him in the midst of his amazement; being exceedingly pleased with his late dream, of which he conceived a mighty good omen to old England, differing so very much from the preceding, both in nature and signification.

Thus, tho' earlier than he usually rose, he gets up to set it down, whilst fresh in his mind, and also the year, being 1707, then takes a walk before breakfast, and the beatt with him; which, being not yet recovered of its late fright keeps close to his master, every now and then looking behind, as tho' still afraid; at which Quarll concludes the creature must needs have been disturbed in its sleep, the night before, with some frightful dream; which
made

made him wonder, that an animal void of reason, and incapable of reflection, should be susceptible of imagination.

The day being passed without any extraordinary occurrence, he made no further remark, but followed his usual occupation, and then went to his rest, and the monkey to his new bed, as the night before, which he took care to draw as close to his master as he could, then having been twice or thrice about the room, examining every corner, he lies down, and sleeps quietly till the dawning of the morning; at which time he starts up again as the night before.

Quarll, being a second time awaked in the same manner, and much about the same hour, concludes the cause must proceed from the pillow, and resolves to experiment himself the next night; at which time crowds of terrifying aspects appear in his imagination, which allure his whole faculties, and set all his senses in an uproar; his eyes are taken up with frightful objects, and his ears filled with a terrible noise; at which all the rest of his senses have lost their offices, and are become useless.

Being awake the next morning, he finds himself inclined to believe, that the pillow had really some influence on his imagination; but as one night's experience was not a sufficient solution to his enquiry in that supernatural operation, having often dreamed before he used the pillow; he resolves to try it several nights successively; during which his monkey slept very quiet, and he as disturbed. This works a great way towards the persuasion of what he had a strong fancy to believe: Yet, to be better satisfied of the reality of it, he lays by the pillow for three or four nights together; during which time, both he and the beast slept very quiet.

This added much to his opinion, that evil effluvia issued out of those feathers the pillow was stuffed with; but as he formerly dreamed, and had many nights intermission between those that were entertained with dreams, he will once more try it, before he concludes that it is so; thus puts it again under his head that night: And, as it was the last experiment, it proved also the most troublesome, he being at that time terrified with more shocking objects than the preceding; which tho' they represent fierce and bloody battles to his imagination, yet were less terrible

to.

to him; having not, as yet, discerned his native country engaged therein, whom now he finds to be the principal party concerned, on which all success depends, and which cannot be strove for without vast expences, and irretrievable loss of his dear countrymen; for which his heart bled as plentifully as for those whom he dreamed he saw in their gore.

Having with terror and grief fatigued his eyes with the most shocking and afflicting effects of war, men and horses lying as thick upon the ground as grass in a meadow, and streams of blood running like so many brooks, supplied by a strong spring; he lifts up his eyes to heaven, imploring an end to that execrable devourer of mankind.

And whilst his eyes were still fixed to the heavens, he sees victory rushing thro' thick clouds of obstacles approaching to her; which having overcome, she settled over the army his countrymen belonged to, over whose head she shook and flourished her colours, pointing at approaching peace, attended with plenty; but on a sudden there arose an insidious mist out of the ground, which cramped the Englishmen's hands, that they could no more use their conquering arms, this fatal accident having both encouraged and strengthened the enemy, they fell on the unfortunate remains of the army, with unmerciful fury; who, now having lost all their support and dependence, were most cruelly cut to pieces; at which most dismal and afflicting object, he awaked: And tho' this dream was a sufficient proof of the feathers influence, yet he cannot be satisfied but it must be ominous, having so much relation to the preceding; therefore sets it down with them; and, for a surer conviction of what he had all imaginable reason to believe, he is resolved to try his monkey once more the night following: But the beast, who had not yet forgot the uneasiness that the bed had caused him, chose to lie on the ground: which intirely convinced Phil, that there was a malignant quality in those feathers: Wherefore he throws them into the sea, and fills the case with a sort of soft moss, which grew at the bottom of a particular tree, on which the creature lay very quiet ever after.

And as yearly stripping the eagles of their eggs, had prevented their increase, it also favoured and advanced that of the creatures in the island, on whose young they fed:

fed ; so that the number of wild monkeys being considerably augmented, made their food scant, which caused them now-and-then to come and steal somewhat out of Phil's ground. Beaufidelle, whose good keeping and warm lying had made him thrive in bigness and strength exceeding his kind, finding some of them stealing his master's roots, beat them away ; which obliged those subtle creatures to come several together, the better to be able to encounter him ; which Phil. having taken notice of, and being willing to add a new sport to his usual diversions, cuts a stick of the length and bigness that the creature could manage, which he gave him : and, taking his own staff, exercises it before him, which did the same with his ; and, apprehending what use it was given him for, he had it often in his hands, and with it drove away the others, when they came, tho' ten or a dozen together ; so so that the roots were very well guarded, by his continual watching ; which made those sly and spiteful creatures watch an opportunity to take him at a disadvantage : Thus finding him one morning, as he was going for water by himself, as he was wont to do, and being then without his staff, of which they stood in great fear, a considerable number fell upon him, and so bit and beat him, that he lay as dead ; but his master appearing, who being uneasy at his extraordinary stay, was gone to see what was the occasion thereof, put them to the flight ; and they left the poor creature with just breath enough to keep its life in, and scarce strength sufficient to draw it.

Phil. being come to the place where his beloved Beaufidelle lay in a most dismal bloody condition, could not forbear shedding tears to see him thus miserably dying : but, finding still breath in him ; it gave him hopes of his recovery : And taking him up in his arms, with all the care he could, he hastens home, and gives him a little of the liquor he had made, which by that time had got both body and spirit ; then having laid him upon his bed, and covered him with his winter wrapper, he makes a fire and warms some of the said liquor, and fresh butter, where-with he washes its sores ; so lays him down again, giving him all the careful attendance he could, during his illness, which held but one week ; at the end of which he died, to his unspeakable grief, who, from that time grew so melancholy, that he had not the courage to go on with his memorial ; till having a most remarkable dream about
twelve

twelve months after, he changed his resolution, and proceeded in his memoirs: And as he set down his dream, he also did the death of his beloved beast, it happening near the same time.

Having spent the year but dully, for want of diverting company at home; to put this as much out of his mind as he could, he walked the spare hours he had left from his usual occupation. Thus being one day somewhat fatigued, having lost his wonted alacrity, he sat down under the next cluster of trees he came at; and, being in a dull disposition, was soon lulled asleep, at a lonesome note of a certain sort of melancholy bird, which shuns others company (tho' of its own kind) at all times but in breeding-time; which, having placed itself in the thickest and shadiest part of the grove, where Phil. had made choice to lie, falls a singing his melancholy notes; which being suitable to his disposition of both body and mind, soon lulled him asleep; during which he dreamed, that he saw an old man sitting in a large circle, around which all the signs of the Zodiac were, and the old gentleman appeared extreme busy, stringing of small beads, some white, and some black; and, when he had strung a certain number, he began another string, and so on. He had the curiosity to tell how many he put in a string, so keeps an account of the next he did begin, and tells just 60: Having made as many of these strings as there were beads in each, he puts them together, and begins again to string, mixing white and black as they came to his hand, twisting every sixtieth string in parcels, till he had made sixty of them, which he neatly plaits together, proceeding as from the beginning, and makes 24 of those plaits, which he weaves together, making a flat piece of bead-work, changeable upon black, which, when looked upon one way seemed pleasant, and, being seen from another, as disagreeable. He worked on till he had made three hundred and sixty five such pieces, then lays them up in a bundle, and goes to work again, beginning to string as at first.

Having looked himself weary with seeing still the same, of which he could make nothing, he goes away leaving the old gentleman stringing his beads, who, seeing him go, lays by his work, and follows him; and having overtaken him, asked him, what he had been looking at all that time? He, being surprised at the surly question, modestly

deftly replies, he had been admiring his work; in doing which, he hoped there was no offence. No, said the old man, provided thou learnest something by what thou haft feen. To which he answered, it was impoffible for him to learn fuch a myfterious bufinefs, with once feeing it done: fo much lefs, being entirely a ftranger to it. A ftranger to it art thou? replied the old man in a furlly manner; and haft waftef fo much of my work! I am Time, whom thou haft often ill-used; and thofe white and black beads, that thou haft feen me ftring are good and bad moments, I croud into minutes, which I link into hours; thus weave days, wherewith years are compofed. Thou haft feen me complete the prefent, which is reckoned the year 1713, I tell thee, before the enfuing is ended, I will grace the British throne with an illuftrious race to the end of kings reigns; fo vanifhed. Then he awaked in a great furprife, and goes home, pondering on his dream; of which he inferred, that if there be any fignification in the roving conceptions of the mind, this muft prognoficate the fpeedy acceffion of fome great monarch upon the Englifh throne: So fets down in his memorial that moft remarkable dream, which happened in 1713 heartily wifhing the accomplifhment thereof, for the quiet and profperity of his dear country.

There happened nothing after, for the fpace of four years, but great thunders and lightnings in the fummer, and abundance of hail and fnow in the winter, with now-and-then ftorms, which left feveral forts of filhes in the clifts and holes of the rocks, and fometimes fragments of flaved fhips, and battered casks, or broken chefts, with a plank, and fuch-like products of fhipwreck, not worth recording: By which means, for want of employment he has feveral idle and fullen hours in the day-time, which his late beloved animal's diverting company made flip away with pleafure, and for want of which they now creep flowly on; being loaded with dull and heavy thoughts, which made thofe walks irkfome, he at that time took for eafe; that by the diverfity of objects abroad, his mind might be withdrawn from his anxious folitude.

Having one day perufed his memorial, as he ufed commonly to do once every year, he there faw fet down

the dream which he had in the year 1713, wherein Time^e predicted such great happiness to his dear country the year ensuing, which made such an impression in his mind, that he could never leave off thinking about it.

Accordingly, being walking, and the day proving extraordinary hot, he goes to shelter himself in one of his groves; where, having laid himself down on the grass, he was soon lulled asleep; during which, the idea he had of his former dream, represented to his imagination a most majestic and graceful monarch, with a crown of gold sparkling with rich and brilliant diamonds, and clad in a robe of purple adorned with many beautiful rubies and other precious stones, holding an ivory sceptre in his right hand, and sitting upon a magnificent throne, round which stood many delightful olive plants, which made a great addition to his own lustre.

Having, with a great deal of pleasure, gazed at the most graceful countenance of the king, which denoted justice, equity, love, and clemency; he gave heaven thanks for the mighty blessing bestowed on his country, and came away, in order to return to his island, with this additional happiness to the many he already enjoyed.

Being come from court, on his journey he meets the same old gentleman of whom he dreamed the year before; who taking him by the hand, said, I find thou hast been to see the accomplishment of my prediction: Now I'll tell thee more.

*Ere one thousand seven hundred and sixty is written,
All divisions, remember, will cease in Great Britain.*

Next I will shew thee what I have done to secure the accomplishment of my prophecy: Then takes him to a high place, from whence he could see into the cabinets of all the princes in Europe; in several of which, he took notice, lay a vast heap of rich and costly things, but confused, shapeless, and fit for no use: Now, said the old man to him, these are disappointments, and defeated projects, made to intercept what I determined; then vanishes: At which he awak-
ed,

ed, exceeding glad to find himself safe in his blessed island, and wonderful pleased with his dream, which betokened so much good to his dear country.

This was the conclusion of his records in 1724.

ED. DORRINGTON.

F I N I S.

